## LIFE

OF

# Mr. CLEVELAND, NATURAL SON

OF

## Oliver Cromwell.

Written by Himself.

Giving a particular Account of his unhappiness in Love, Marriage, Friendship, &c. and his great Sufferings in Europe and America.

Intermix'd with Reflections, describing the Heart of Man in all its variety of Passions and Disguises.

VOL. IV.

LONDON:

Printed for N. PREVOST in the Strand.

M DCC XXXII.

SHT

## E F E

Mr. CLEVELAND,

NATURAL SON

Oliver Grommell.

Written by Himfelf.

Giving a particular Account of Inisunhappineds in Love, Marriage, Priendthip, &c. and his great Sufferings in Europe and America.

Intermix'd With Refessions, describing the Heart of Man in all its variety or Pullions and Difguises.

VO L. IV.

LONDON:

THE STATE OF THE PARTY OF THE P

Princed for it Parvoyr in the Sound





Calen, and allog there a decent man change of had ready money crough lo the first and reas not very way use

cafily acquit myfelf to leaving

### Mr. CLEVELAND,

NATURAL SON

OF

Oliver Crommell.

BOOK VI.

PON my coming into Europe
I confidered, notwithstanding
the deep anguish which prey'd
upon my spirits, that I was ob-

duties. I was under a necessity of giving

A 2 a proper

50.1

DE

DI

re

in

to

m

br

ve

in

ne

pa

ph

to

no

are

he

im

of

at

tau

Id

for

2.3

que

₿

a proper education to my children, and the daughter of my unhappy brother, whom I was bound to love as dearly as my two fons. I was also oblig'd in honour to fettle my fifter-in-law, and Mrs. Lallin, and allow them a decent maintenance. I had ready money enough to do all this, and was not any way uneafy on these accounts, especially with regard to the two ladies; towards whom I might eafily acquit myself, by leaving to them the place they might chuse to settle in. But tho' my circumstances gave mean opportunity of bestowing a liberal education on my fons and my niece Bridge; I yet was more divided with regard to the method of it, and the place I should send With respect to the method, them to. wish'd it had been in my own power to regulate it; and to act the fame part to wards them, as my mother had done to me. I weigh'd these matters for a conside rable time, but at last found that my mind was so much disturb'd, that it would be impossible for me to order these seve ral particulars, in fo just and regular manner as was necessary. I consider -farther, that my instructions must ce tainly take a tincture, from the deep af fliction that then fat brooding over m foul a prope

ho-Mrs. ain-

ight

the But

301-

cion yet

the **fend** 

d, I

r to

toe to

ide

my

ould

eve r

er

cer

af

m oul

and oul; which possibly might make them her, oo gloomy and severe for children of hat age: not to mention what my own y as experience had taught me, viz. that fin-gular and uncommon methods of education, how judicious soever they may apto pear in theory, don't always succeed in easy practice. Man was form'd for society: gard reason therefore suggests, that our infantinstructions should be given with a view to what nature has appointed us for. In my opinion, 'tis departing from this, to breed up a child in solitude; and to prevent him from imbibing that knowledge in his infancy, which will be perpetually necessary to him, during the remaining part of his life. The precepts which philosophy inculcates, are, indeed, fuited to all ages and feafons; but as they are not to be consider'd, even where they are of the greatest use, but as so many helps to wildom, that is, as so many maxims, to direct and support us in the practice of our duties; 'tis plain, that we ought, at the fame time, if not before, to be taught what those duties are; otherwise, I don't fee how they can produce a wish'd for effect.

Now the most natural, and confequently the most indispensible of all du-3031

ties, are those of society; duties which are not acquir'd by bare speculation, but from what is properly call'd the knowledge of the world, which is seldom attain'd but by practice. I therefore concluded, that I could not pitch upon any method of education which could prove so useful, as that commonly follow'd; I mean the sending them to a publick school: 'tis not but this method also has its inconveniences, but then I look'd upon them as inconsiderable, when compar'd with the many and solid advantages which result from this way of bringing up youth.

KS

uj

fa

w

be

VE

W

he

15

OI

di

LI

an

m

CC

DO

V

CC

ar

O

ai

HAVING thus made choice of the method, I was next to fix upon a place. I was now in France, where I might either reside, or go over into England. But as I did not intend to be far from my children, I wanted to pitch upon fome city, which might fuit with us all. I had nothing to do with regard to them, but to look out a school, which I might easily find; fo that I was now concern'd only upon my own account. After having fuffer'd fo many losses, and met with such a series of misfortunes, in what part of the world could I now hope to meet with an afylum? In case I follow'd only the blind impulses of an affliction, which was inceffantly prefent

ich

but

w-

at-

on-

ny

ove

d;

ck

ias

D-

d

ch

1.

e-

I

er

as

14

7,

)-

0

1;

n

d

5

d

S

ent to my mind; I then could wish for o other refuge but the grave. vas no longer capable of liking one part of the world better than another; for fo excessive was my forrow, that I look'd upon every thing with indifference, not to fay distaste and aversion. Like to a man whom a burning fever confines to the bed of grief: the fire which rages in his veins, drives fleep from his eyes, and won't fuffer him to take a moment's rest; he turns and toffes about inceffantly, and is every instant shifting his posture, in order to find out one which may ease his dreadful agonies; he stretches his wearied limbs towards every part of the bed; and hopes, in vain, to meet with that eafe in the part to which he turns, which he could not find in that he left: Every new posture which his pangs force him to throw himself into, seems the most grievous and insupportable. Thus, when I confulted only my tortur'd imagination, I could not find any particular fpot upon earth, which I might prefer to the rest; and that might give me the least hopes of proving a remedy, or even of foothing my heart-breaking afflictions.

But then perhaps, fays I, reason may afford me more consolation, notwithstand-

A 4

ing

t it o e

to

Ita

en

Ita

to

he

he

di

ta

ti

de

T

fi

no

th

b

al

16

ing that the refources it offer'd me were still impotent; I at least know by past experience, that in case my present evils were not absolutely incurable, twas from reason alone I could expect a cure. Tho I was not yet sensible of its efficacy, I yet knew its ftrength; and was not ignorant of the means which that faculty would employ to bring me to a wish'd for tranquillity; provided I could but be fo much master of my felf as to follow its dictates. The greatest difficulty therefore was to prevail with my felf to liften to it, and to begin again, by infenfible degrees, to reliff its principles, which grief had not deftroy'd, but only suspended their functions as it were. For this purpose, it was necessary for me to pitch upon a place to fettle in, in which I might find, either by converfation or study, such expedients as might calm my troubled mind, and restore my reason to its former empire. Indeed my last unhappiness was of such a nature, that it requir'd ftronger reme-Whatever exists no more may be forgotten: a resentment of injuries, the remembrance of the loss of possessions, and of a once miferable condition, decay and grow fainter by time. Even the loss of perfons dear as life it felf, how mournful

#### Mr. CLEVELAND.

at

ils

m or

I

n-

nch

294

to

to

ot

as ce

er

its id

ey

40

Ls

90

10

32

iy.

1

ul

al foever the circumstances may be, is last footh'd as years slide on; and we are dead to all hopes, fo our fighs nd wishes die away. But the infidety of a wife, attended with the criminal ircumstances before related; an affliction o justly grounded as I fancied mine to be, the still-existing cause whereof was inessantly present to my memory; such a omplication of heart-breaking circumfrances as these would not suffer me to enjoy a moment's ease. What happy infant could my reason make choice of, to suppress the perpetual numults of my heart; or find an opportunity of being heard in the midft of to much fadness and distraction?

NEVERTHELESS, the hopes I entertain'd of its affiftance, was the only motive which prompted me to fix upon Saumur for my own and my children's refidence, preferable to any other place. That city then made a very confiderable figure; and indeed its reputation could not be founded on two better titles than those of religion and knowledge. It abounded with persons of great piety, able professors, and a multitude of soreigners, who came thicher from all protestant countries, to imbibe wisdom and A 5

v

ho

re n

4

þI

er

lin

m

fh

m

OI

m

er

fo

b

fo

ft

in

h

k

0

virtue, as at their fource. My children could not possibly be educated in a better school; and with regard to my self, I imagin'd there was no place where I could hope to meet with fo much eafe and folid comfort. In what part foever of the world my faithless wife might be; I refoly'd, as was before observ'd, never to go in fearch of her. On the contrary I fancied, tho' I still lov'd her dearly, that I even should not so much as go to see her, did the most favourable opportunity present itself for that purpose. The only resolution I could have taken, had I heard where she was, would perhaps have been to get her feiz'd, without leting her know that it was by my orders; and then to confine her in some place, where the would have no opportunity of ever injuring me more. Twas not a thirst of revenge that suggested this thought: may fhe live, would I fay, notwithstanding the deep anguish which the remembrance of my tenderness, and her flighted vows, awak'd in my boson; may she even be as happy, as her baseness renders her unworthy of being so; may all the happiness she has deprive me of, be united to her own, and by that means make her felicity still more perfect;

dren

bet-

f, 1

bluc

olid

the

re-

to

ry I

hat

fee

nity

on-

dI

aps

et-

rs;

ce,

of

a

his

ot-

he

ner

11;

le-

);

P.

by

re

t:

perfect; or in case justice calls out from eaven for punishment, may she suffer nly by remorfe and repentance! But I we too much to the memory of lord Axninster, to suffer his daughter to be dishonour'd, in case 'tis in my power to prevent her from being fo. I'll get her feiz'd ndeed, but then she shall be confin'd in a secure, but agreeable place, where I'll procure her every fatisfaction in my power. She is of a foft-temper, fays I; Gelin's death will undoubtedly fet the enormity of her crimes in the strongest light; the'll bear confinement with patience; may perhaps spend it in content, and I only shall be wretched.

In this manner the habit I had contracted of controuling my passions, supported me still against those which had not yet entirely gain'd an ascendant over my reason. Hatred and revenge could never be so predominant, as to instil their poyson into my soul; love only and affliction struggled, with wisdom, for pre-eminence in my bosom; but the two last tyrants have made a dreadful havock in it; and I know not yet when heaven will be so good as to deliver me entirely out of their power.

As foon as I was fix'd in the resolution of going to Saumur, I communicated my
A 6 defign

0

ha

V io

a

0

in

6

AΠ

en

bi

er

W

h

W

M

0

t

f

design to Mrs. Lullin and my sister in law; and at the fame time defir'd them to think of some place to settle in. The ladies were determin'd much fooner than I expected, and were fo unanimous, that I did not doubt but they had concerted it before. Both of them cried out almost at the fame inftant, We won't leave you; this is our fixt resolution, and therefore we beg you not to oppose it. You want comfort; and no perfons living will be more defirous of administring it than our felves. As I had hinted to them, that I intended to fend my children to a publick schools they observed to me; that they were as yet too tender to be trusted to strangers; and thereupon, Mrs. Lallin engag'd to behave as a mother to my two fons; and propos'd that my fifter-in-law should undertake the education of her own daughter. She spoke in fo urgent a manner, that having no just objection to make, I acquiesced instantly with their defires; fo that continuing still blinder than ever, with regard to the principal cause of my misfortune and that of my wife; I conferred improdently to what must naturally contribute to perpetuate it. Upon this, we agreed to go immediately to Saumur, and there hire a house for

4m

hem

The

han

that

rted

ou;

ore

ant

be

bur ut I

ab.

hat

bed

lin

WO

aw

rer

tà

to

eir

er

al

Ŋ

at

te

e-

r

me was not so famous, as to engage cople to use me with a peculiar distinction; we nevertheless agreed that I should hange it; I being firmly resolved to avoid very thing that had the air of oftentation, or might hinder me from studying. The two ladies likewise chang'd their names in such a manner, that it was impossible they should be known by them; and upon this, we set out for Nantz in 1667, immediately after the conclusion of the peace between France and Englands and soon got very happily to our journey's end.

This pacific fituation of affairs had brought so great a confluence of foreigners to Saumur, that we could scarce meet with a house for our purpose; which, however we at last did. My first care was to get a large flore of books, and whatever elfe was necessary for my new philosophical projects. I had made choice of a place situated a little remote from the city, in order to be more at liberty, either to fee company or be alone, as I should judge proper of The conduct of the children, and of my domestic affairs, I left to the women; and shutting my self up in my fludy from morning to night, I began

ye

el

le

ha

Bi

WC

an

dr

in

th

Ve

ar

be

W

V

n

a

b

t

f

I began again to improve my mind with reading and reflection; delightful exercise! to which I ow'd all the joys of my infant years, and from which I now hop'd to reap the same benefit. Tho' I had so long laid afide my studies, I nevertheless had not forgot all I had formerly learnt; fo that without being oblig'd to go fo far back as the elements, it yet was no difficult matter for me to strike into ways which I had never entirely loft fight of. I refum'd them at the fame point where I left off; that is to fay, relying on the folidity of the principles which I had imbib'd in the dawn of life, I fought for fome method in books and reflections, how to apply them to the present fituation of my mind. This employ'd my thoughts for fome weeks; and here all my struggles and my whole attention center'd; I fay all the ftruggles, and all the attention I was capable of bestowing for I must be forced to confess, to my own shame, or that of philosophy; that my exterior folitude, and my apparent affiduity, were unfaithful images of the inward disposition of my foul; for while my eyes were fix'd on a book. my thoughts would infenfibly stray from it, and wander through the feveral places which

with

xer-

my

p'd

d fo

eless

nt;

of

no

ays

of.

re I

101

m+

or

15,

a-

V

ill

on 11

15

Y

f

r

hich had been the scenes of my misfornes. These would image to my fanthe bloody spectacle of my daughter hd Mrs. Riding, murther'd before my yes, and devour'd by tygers in the shape f men; my dreadful fufferings in the eferts of America; the lord Axminster's leplorable end; my wife's infidelity and hameful flight; the fatal effect of dear Bridge's friendship and generosity; in a word, the feveral perfecutions of fortune, and those I might expect hereafter. These dreadful ideas made almost as strong an impression on my mind, as the objects themselves had done; and when I recover'd my felf (fo weak was my constancy and refolution) my eyes would generally be bath'd in tears, and my heart heave with fighs, as they were forcibly endea: vouring to get a vent. If at any time I happen'd to be more attentive than ordinary to what I was reading, I yet was far from reaping that benefit which I had expected from it; the conclusions I drew from my studies, had very little effect on my foul; my meditations were jejune and barren; I indeed perceived truths, but then I could not discover the relation they might bear to my present circumstances; or know how to employ them,

fo as to make them ferve as remedies. Is this, would I fometimes cry out with aftonishment, after having made numberless useless reflections; is this the source of peace and wisdom, which formerly was of fo great advantage to me? are these principles the same with those, on which my strength and tranquillity were formerly fo well founded? Is it they, or I am chang'd? I can eafily account for their failing me at a time when I wanted them; a time, when the diffraction of my thoughts hinder'd me from perceiving those principles; but how was it possible for them then to make their influence be felt. fince they could neither exhibit, or make themselves be heard by a soul which saw nothing but grief and affliction? But what now prevents these principles from re-asfuming their former afcendant? I now invoke their affiftance, and open to them a fad afflicted heart, which languishes till they affift it. Wherefore don't they indulge it inftantly? why don't they restore it to that wish'd for, that happy calm it formerly enjoy'd; and which it believ'd was wholly owing to them?

As neither study or reflections could ease my mind effectually, I at last began to think that there was some error in the foun-2

es. Is

h 21-

aber-

urce

nerly

are

on

were

hey,

for

ated

my

ofe

for

elt,

ke

aw

hat

af-

in-

m

ill

n-

re

it

d

d

p

ndation of my philosophy is and not ng able to perfuade my felf that the ptiness of my efforts was owing to s, I rather believ'd that 'twas I my felf viated from the right way, either in my inciples or my method. I us'd to arhe in the following manner: Nature, ys I; or to fpeak without a figure, the vine wisdom would never let men be tpos'd to incurable evils. As the gave hem existence, she engages her self, in me measure, to furnish them with the heans of preserving themselves; otherrife, confidering the numberless evils to which they are incessantly obnoxious hey would be the most wretched of all beings, finding themselves exposed to continual forrows, at the fame time that they are endued with reason; because it would then feem that it had been indulg'd for no other purpose but to torture them. And indeed we fee, that there are few diftempers but have a remedy pointed out for them, either by the light of nature, or fome happy experiments. In case any should be found incurable, they are not to be consider'd as the work of nature any more than monsters; 'tis enough that, pursuant to the general laws of nature, we meet with

(8)

few infirmities but what are cured by the affiftance of the physician. Has not providence extended its care to brutes? We daily observe that they are acquainted with the virtues of simples, and eat a great many things which heal their diseases. Thus God's wisdom extends itself to the preservation of all animal beings, not excepting such as are void of reason.

e

ai

10

h

bu

pa

re

th

th

ve

CO

m

CC

it

I

P

d

t

Now if this disposition appears just and necessary with regard to the body, which undoubtedly is the most inferior part of us, and has no other dignity but what it borrows from its union with the foul: would it not be the highest affront to the justice and wisdom of our Creator. to think he has fo far neglected the most noble of two substances, as to refuse it that fuccour which he indulges to the most contemptible of them? Grief, and the rest of the violent passions, are the diseases of the soul. A pestiserous sever cannot make wilder havock in the whole mass of blood, than these tyrants do in the rational faculties. Could it be posfible for us ever to believe, that there is no remedy against their cruel attacks, and that the most grievous of all evils is incurable? It either is not fo, or furely I have not a fuitable idea of the justice of our Creator. As

y the

pro.

We

inted

at a

dif-

tfelf

ngs,

on.

juft

dy.

rior

but

the

ont

or,

oft

ib

he

nd

he

er

le

n

**G**-

S

,

S

1

As I therefore succeed so ill in soothing y anxiety, certainly the fault is either my self, or in the remedies I employ; is in my self in case I have err'd in the nethod, or in some of my principles; or the remedy, if the mind is not to be used by philosophy, and that the Divine eing makes so great an effect flow from ome other cause.

Bur then again I would object, what ause have I to suspect philosophy? has ot she, in all ages, been consider'd as he standard by which we are to square our conduct; and the controuler of the passions? Have not the greatest men had recourse to her on all occasions, when they wanted either to correct or regulate the heart? Would these imagine her invested with a power she has not; and could they have been as much deceiv'd as my felf, in flattering themselves that she could furnish them with a succour which it is not in her power to lend? Upon this, I refolv'd to re-examine my own principles, and all I had formerly imbib'd, which was not very difficult for me to do, as I had a very happy memory. I then endeavour'd wholly for some days, to recollect all my mother had taught me; and the most excellent notions I had either read, or my own thoughts had fuggested, with regard to wisdom and hap-

he eff

X

et the

we

bo de

an

aé

fo

19

at

tl

O

T

1

piness.

I TRAC'D matters from their origin; and carried my imagination fo far backward, as the first instant in which a man is suppos'd to enjoy a free use of his reafon; as nothing is more present to his mind than himself, consequently his first attention must necessarily be fix'd on his own being. He examines its nature, and finds it to be compounded. Two fubstances of a different kind, and unequal in dignity, with regard to their essence, are found united and blended, as it were, to produce actions common to both. Each of them, consider'd separately, is altogether incapable of performing the other's operations; and yet, when united together, they both produce the fame operation. The body moves, walks and acts, to all which it is naturally fitted; and yet it would not move, were it not for the conjunction of the foul, which is incapable of motion. Our foul receives the feveral fensations of pleasure and pain which is its nature, and yet it would not receive them, were it not for the mediation of the body, which is altogether incapable of fentation one form Thus nodi

ug-

ap,

in,

an

is

ft

is

d

1

1

Thus there are two diftinet parts of he fame being, which are absolutely neeffary to each other. The body cannot xert itself unless it be so inform'd and ctuated by the foul; as on the other fide, the foul would be in a perpetual apathy, were it not for the mediation of the body. But then does this mutual dependence argue their equality? To this I answer, no; and find on the contrary, that the body does not contribute to those actions which are common to it with the foul, but after a groveling manner, that is to fay, by mere motions; and in case any other property is peculiar to it, 'tis not of a more noble kind; tis barely that of receiving a bounded number of shapes and combinations, which is so inconfiderable an advantage, that it does not deserve the name of perfection. But on the other fide, the foul appears to have all the characteristicks of true greatness. What name shall I give to that wonderful faculty, by which it perceives, knows and judges? The foul studies, and contemplates its own substance, and difcovers the nature and properties of it. Notwithstanding the dependence it has on the body, it yet difengages itself fo far from it, as to consider the latter as a being

ha

bei

hat

tie

an

cal

W

in

PI

CC

b

t

i

a being of a quite different nature from, and inferior to itself; a substance, whose greatest glory is its being united with, and forming one being with the soul. This penetrates, weighs and examines the nature of the body, but finds the latter so contemptible; that she concludes it were almost as good not to exist at all, as be so groveling and insensible a portion

of matter.

HENCE, in case the soul applies her felf to contemplate all the is capable of perceiving; the foon discovers, that the' The is united with a material body, by fuch laws as it is impossible for her to comprehend, the yet is related to something of a more exalted and worthy nature. The least reflection gives her an idea of order, and of the several perfections and virtues; when finding the thing the perceives is not herfelf, the concludes, that what thus exhibits itself so clearly, must necessarily have a real existence, fince a non-ens must be imperceptible. So important a discovery fills her at first with doubts and fears; the enquires, internally, what she ought to think of a being which thus reveals itself only in part; but at the same time, after so bright, so sublime a manner, as the prefently discovers that from,

whofe

with,

foul.

nines

the

udes

all,

tion

her

e of

ho'

by

to

ne-

14-

an

C-

ng

S,

e,

e. It

1-

-

that this being must certainly be more perfect than herself, since she is illuminated by it. But has the soul no other tie or communication with it, than a bare and transient perception? At least how came it to pass that she was not informed with it sooner? But now she is for retracing the past, in order to examine the progress of her knowledge; when she confesses with astonishment, that she does but then begin to know.

And now her admiration and surprize encrease. Tis no hard matter for her to discover, at the same time, this new æra of her existence. But what being indulged it her? The soul plainly perceives, that she her self is not the author of it. By what methods shall she find out the Being, whose goodness gave, and maintains, her existence.

To make this important enquiry, the has recourse to exterior objects. She considers every thing which surrounds her: what a variety of objects present themselves, and how eagerly she pants to discover the nature of them all! Nevertheless, she soon sees that her ideas are more confin'd than she at first suspected they were. She does not find any thing in the whole compass of beings round her,

That immense composition which we call the world, stops her but a moment; for a little resection on the least of its parts, teaches her to form a judgment of the rest. She sees nothing but matter, that is, a gross and insensible substance, whose whole difference consists merely in the variety of its motions and consigurations; and is directly of the same nature with those of her body, which she had before discover'd and despis'd; and she has too exalted an idea of her self, to ascribe her original to so mean and groveling a cause.

A f

0

Tis true indeed, that amidft those parts of matter which appear to her fufceptible only of a blind and passive motion; the perceives some which seem to move with more choice and liberty. She observes, that their actions are too yarious, and at the same time too beautifully link'd, and too regular, not to fpring from a rational, intelligent principle. Besides, their form agrees exactly with that of her own body; they feem to have the fame tendency, and to be obnoxious to the fame wants. Thence he concludes that they don't act alone, that they are accompanied with fomething which

oubt.

W.

nent;

nt of

tter,

erely

onfi-

na.

The

and

felf.

and

ofe

uf-

10-

to

he

ri-

ti-

to

i-

ly

n

)-

e

t

fembles her self; in fine, that they are ke her own body, the shell or receptate of something of a more noble nature han themselves. Thrice happy discovery! May she not owe her existence to some f those exalted and immaterial Beings? These think, feel, and reslect as she does; nay not they therefore have communicated to her, what they themselves posses?

But in case they bear a resemblance to the foul, as she is firmly persuaded hey do, why should they enjoy a power which she is sensible she does not? But Supposing they really were invested with such a power, to whom would they owe it? for 'tis very evident they could not possibly have bestow'd it on themselves. For then neither they, nor her felf, would continue long in the mortifying dependance on a body, in case they could act as they pleas'd, and produce any change in their condition. The foul must therefore leave the enquiry of the feveral objects round her, as of no service to her refearches. She finds her felf lodg'd in the world, but she manifestly perceives that it did not give her being; and that she cannot ascribe her original to what is inferior to her felf; or to a thing which being VOL. IV.

at most her equal; must, as well as her felf, owe its existence to some cause.

it

TO

h

n

u

lo

Fa

ir

In the mean time, this excursion on outward objects, is of the highest advantage to her. In examining the matter of which this vast universe is fram'd, fhe feems to have observ'd something that naturally raised her admiration. However, 'twas not matter it felf, for this appear'd equally mean and contemptible in its several shapes and modifications: but what idea is the to form of the aftonishing harmony and order, which fhines in the œconomy of its feveral parts? How just is the relation throughout! how regular the proportions! how exact the concatenation of subordinate causes and effects! On the other side, what a maje-Ay appears in the general disposition of the defign! what a noble fimplicity in the execution! what a constant uniformity in its duration! How was matter thus capable of forming the most magnificent, the most ravishing of all spectacles? How defirous foever the Creator of fo glorious a work may be to conceal himself, tis impossible but his singer most be feen on this occasion: his power must necessarily be infinite, otherwise he could never have produc'd fo many wonderful

as her

on on

t ad.

mat. m'd,

hing

tion.

for

mp-

fica-

of of

nich

rts?

the

ind

je-

of

in

1

cr

i

aof

4

ance as matter. Nor can his wisdom be is infinite than his power, in thus exibiting himself so conspicuously, in the order and disposition of his work. Lastly, hat his goodness is equal to his wisdom and power, appears from his having taken uch pleasure, in dissufing so much spleasure, and ornament over his creatures.

HERE the philosophical soul, which suppose to be still fix'd in attention, perceives its comparing and reflecting faculty wholly reawak'd. She recalls, in an exitacy of joy, the first ideas which prompted her to make those enquiries; and begins to find, in a very fenfible manner, that they are no longer shadowy, but real. That unknown Being, whom she perceiv'd only by the vague and random ideas the had of order and perfection, then reveals it self in an almost fenfible manner. And now all her doubts must vanish foon: she has found what she fought after; 'tis the Creator of all things, and confequently the author of her being; 'tis the fource of life, and the principle of universal light; 'tis the fountain of order, wildom, goodness, justice, and of all virtues and perfections, or rather 'tis order itself; wisdom, justice and goodness B 2

goodness are its effence. 'Tis all virtue,

all perfection, and all excellency.

A PHILOSOPHER that could once raise himself to this happy point of knowledge, justly believes he has attain'd to the highest degree of illumination, to which his foul was capable of ascending. All the rest consists only in displaying and exercifing it. Henceforwards he will proceed from science to science, that is, from certainty to certainty. What a prodigious field is here open'd! He is at once fensible of the truth of all his ideas; and of the infallibility of his judgments, in case he examines things attentively. As he was form'd by a Being, whose wisdom and goodness are infinite; he is persuaded, that the qualities which it indulged him, are not specious and deceitful. The fame intelligence which endued him with those exalted ideas of order, justice, goodness and wisdom, cannot possibly abandon him in less difficult researches: having now discover'd the principles, the study of the consequences will be easy. and agreeable.

FIRST, he enquires anew into the nature of his foul, in order to discover more clearly therein the finger of his Creator. Since he discover'd such divine touches in

matter

fi

t

uc,

uife ge,

hhis

he

1

0,

m i-

ce

in

S

n |-

ď

e

matter only, what may he not expect to find in a Being of an infinitely more exalted nature? And indeed, he perceives two things in it, which are great above all comparison. The first is the faculty of thinking, which enables him to know and multiply his lights to infinitude; a faculty of fo exalted a nature, that he himself, tho' possessed of it, is very much puzzled how to explain it. He perceives much better what it is not, than what it is. It does not bear the least resemblance to matter, whose numberless shapes and motions can never produce any thing like a thought. Neither is it that harmony, order, justness and perfection, which result from a certain disposition of the several parts of matter. For in case this harmony and perfection have a real and proper existence, then the faculty of thinking must be dependent on that of matter; and the foul is conscious that hers is wholly independent on any thing of a material nature. The very reluctance and uneafiness the soul feels, to find herfelf subject to the body, in some of her operations, is a natural proof that the does not owe any thing to the latter; and would willingly be disengaged from it, were the not united to it by certain

laws. Besides, were the foul no more than the order, the harmony and perfection of the body; how could it poffibly be of greater extent than the body itfelf? Its dimensions would then correfoond exactly with the parts of the body, to which it belongs. Now the foul finds itself more extensive than the whole mass united; she foars infinitely above, and perceives the bounds of matter; and therefore the must be wholly independent on it ; But what is the then? Posibly she will not be allow'd to have a more perfect knowledge of her felf, 'till another feafon, and in another stare; however, this the knows certainly, viz. that the is a thinking being a an inestimable advantage, which alone sufficiently proves the dignity and infinite greatness of her Creator.

ti

a

This first mark of a divine artist, is undoubtedly the most illustrious; but then 'tis not the only one worthy the not tice of the philosopher. The philosopher turns his eyes inward, and contemplates but a moment: what does he to perceive?—I should not say perceive, for it here ceases to go by that name; he now feels within himself a secret inclination, an active principle, which pushes him

TOPE

per-

Mi-

it-

re-

dy.

ads

afs

nd

e-

nc

ly

re

77

1+

H

é

.

him forward to fomething he does not yet know.—How shall he define this sensation? 'Tis the exigency of some unknown want, which requires to be filled. If it be not a pain, 'tis at least the privation of a necessary pleasure. He pants after a certain good, without which he cannot be easy; it attracts him incessantly; he is prompted to seek after it by an involuntary impulse; and dragg'd away, as it were, by an irresistible ascendant.

HE then finds, he is not only susceptible of desires, but that some of these are stronger and less limited than the knowledge which irradiates his mind. This reflection startles him at first; for he does not immediately see through the wise difposition with which the Creator has order'd all things. He first considers his defires as a natural confession, and a mortifying testimony of the imperfection of his being; which gives him the greater pain, as he does not at first find out the object of them, and how long they may continue. Importunate clouds, which are of no other use but to ruffle the eternity of his foul! Afflicting interruption, which will check the progress of his knowledge; and prevent him from calmly employing the faculty of thinking with B 4 which

h

br

01

he

He

hìr

hir

ed

he

ha

th

ſi

n

which he is inform'd! Though he does not dare to complain of his Creator, or fuspect his wisdom and goodness; he at least fighs when he reflects on his own condition; it lessens the high idea he had entertain'd of his own greatness; and in order to fave, in some measure, the remains of it; he resolves, if possible, to suppress and extinguish his desires, in order to devote himself, by the exercise of a more noble faculty, to the contemplation of truth. But he cannot continue long in this error; for the moment he has made fome little advances towards truth, he finds that she was the object of his defires. He cannot mistake in this; for his heart glows as he approaches towards her. This inquietude now feems upon the point of fubfiding, and his cravings of being fill'd. He imagines, that either truth was made for him, or at least himself for truth. 'Tis certain, that the more he discovers of her, the more eager he is to discover her thoroughly. But now his desires are far from giving him pain; 'tis the state of a man who is possessed of so much felicity, that he cannot fufficiently fatiate himself with it; he is happy, and would be more fo. In this manner does the philosopher meet with a fresh source of

oes

or

at

wn

ad

in

ins

els

e-

re

of

in le

•

ing;

f content and admiration, in those things thich before gave him pain. What he onsider'd as an imperfection in himself, ow appears to him a fresh indication of he infinite perfections of his Creator. He not only sees that he was form'd by him; but he seels that he was formed for him only. His desires are sound adapted, as it were, to his ideas. By his ideas he knows himself to be the work of his hand; and his desires draw him towards that Being, as the supreme good, and the fountain of all his happiness.

THAT man who has been always immers'd in sense; and perhaps never confider'd the two principal faculties of his mind; is incapable of conceiving the joy with which those sublime, those important discoveries inspire a philosophical soul.— No; this he is not capable of, for were he fo, he would be jealous of it, and despise every other species of joy. And indeed we are hence to date the happy course of a rational and truly philosophical life. Whofoever has known his Creator and himself, may, if he pleases, tread unerringly the paths of wisdom and happiness. The way is open to him; and he never loses fight of the end of his course. Directed by his understand-

ing, at the fame time that he is excited by his defires; he is equally incapable of going aftray thro' ignorance, or stopping in his way thro' faintness. If he is bound, as being a man, by fome ties with the creatures of his own species, he does all that duty requires of him; and takes his conduct in this particular, from the fource of that order and justice which he is perpetually contemplating. The ties of blood, such as tenderness and affection for relatives; the duties of humanity, fuch as kindness, mildness, forgetfulness of injuries, and compassion for the fufferings of others; those of reason, fuch as evenness of mind, constancy, a contempt of superfluity, and a moderate use of necessaries, are the many consequences which flow naturally from his principles, and form his fystem of morality. He copies, in some measure, after his Creator, and aggrandizes himself by imitating the fovereign perfections by which he is pleased to reveal himself. Besides; society with mankind is not an obstacle to wisdom, for such as love, and enquire sincerely after it; so far from it, he finds the acquaintance of his fellow-creatures useful. Did I not say, that they all bore the image of their Creator? This the

cited

e of

pine

md,

the

all

his

-19C

ion

ty,

els

he

n,

2

to e-

is

1-

r

he philosopher perceives, tho they unappily disfigure it. This is a fight which strengthens his defires; he draws in advantage from the effects of their irregular passions; their arts, their sciences, most of which owe their invention to interest and vanity, are by him made subfervient to his views, as being fo many fuecours which extend his knowledge. These are excellent effects of a bad cause. which he rectifies and refines more and more, by the use he puts them to; and thus applies them to what they were originally defign'd. In fine, he makes a confiderable advantage of even the very fight of the frailties and filly buftles of mankind. The comparison he makes of these, with the vigour and perpetual calm of his mind, strengthens him still more in his principles; makes his happiness dearer to him, and the fruits of his researches more precious. He devotes himself without referve to wisdom, being prompted to love her from this double motive; viz. because he is happy through her, and finds that without her he would be stupid and miserable.

What after this is wanting to entitle him justly to the name of wife man? Let us summon up all our knowledge, and B 6 the

the collected force of reason, in order to form to ourselves a more just idea of such a person. Possibly some may give a greater extent to this character, but I am of opinion 'tis impossible to entertain a more fublime one. 'Tis in this happy state that the philosopher ought to be equally insensible, both to those evils which may make him lose that title, and to those good things which he may receive from another cause; the former ought not to have power enough, to force a fingle pang from him; and the latter should appear too contemptible in his eyes to give him a real pleasure. It must be confess'd, that the soul is naturally subjected to the organs of the body; 'tis impossible but she must see when the eyes are open; hear, when the nerves of the ear are shaken; and feel, the instant any extraordinary motion happens in that portion of matter to which she is united. But can this fensation lessen her greatness, or weaken her liberty? The foul rejects it, whenever she finds it unworthy the excellency of her nature; at least, she receives it without fixing upon, or confenting to it. The more her dependence on the body incommodes and humbles her, the greater consolation this administers;

te

on Su

fo

it

e

T

P

rto

a

am

1 a

Py.

cils

nd

e-

er

ce

es

e

-

it thereby plainly shews her, that so olent a state cannot last long. How ould it be possible for her to doubt f this? She is too well acquainted vith the invariable laws of primitive and ternal order. The order of nature is only an exception to this; she is even fure, that they hold to one another by fome fecret tye, tho' she cannot perceive it yet, and expects a feason of manifestation and light; when all obscurities and exceptions ceasing, she then will see every thing return to its end, and re-enter peaceably into the general order. She therefore finds herself created for another state; she has already attain'd it, in some measure, by the ardency of her desires and the certainty of her hopes; and perpetually indifferent with regard to every thing that cannot prevent her from attaining it one day; she despises pleasure, considers grief as nothing, and views the hurry and agitation of all things round her without the least emotion; and would be equally insensible were this fabrick of the universe and all nature destroy'd.

Such are the foundations on which I believ'd my strength and constancy fix'd; and such were the instructions I had imbib'd in my infancy. The studies I had

gone

o

co

k

gone through, my mother's example and her precepts, had always turn'd on these principles. They were become, in some meafure, natural to me, because they had been fo frequently inculcated, and as I revolv'd them incessantly in my mind. And indeed, they had made an impression on my heart, fo long as they found no obstacle. They had been the rule of my life, whilst it was calm and untroubled. I imagin'd myself to be a philosopher; and perhaps I was truly fo, before I was arrived at a certain degree of milery and ill fortune. But 'twas this very reflection that confounded, and made me have a fuspicion of philosophy itself. For why did it abandon me when I found it most necessary? What idea could I entertain of a remedy, which vanish'd away the inftant the disease discover'd itself? Nevertheless, I could not deny but that the principles I had re-examin'd, were as folid as ever. Nothing in the world is certain, would I fay, nothing is to be depended upon; if that which now appears to me to be founded invincibly on fuch clear arguments, is all fophism and an unhappy illusion. If what I have constantly follow'd was true wisdom, why does the not make me reap the benefits ihe

and

ome

had

as I

ind.

lion

no

my

ed.

r;

ras

nd

f

had promifed? And in case I have histaken error for truth, how deplorable m I, to be at one and the same time torur'd by forrow, and abandon'd by reaion!

I THEN reflected, that possibly my complaints might be without foundation; for I confider'd that it was not enough to know the excellence of a remedy; but that before it can be properly apply'd, it is necessary the nature of the disease should be known. I thereupon examin'd carefully, in what forrow properly confilted; and foon found, that as it is a mere fenfation of the foul, and not to be represented by ideas; we therefore cannot define in better, than by the word forrow, which it is express'd: For to call it simply an aversion of the soul, as some philosophers do, gives an obscure and very imperfect definition of it. In general therefore, fince we are in the dark, even as to the nature of the foul, we cannot pretend to explain what a fensation is. Now if it be impossible to know in what forrow confifts; 'tis manifest that the remedy is not to be directly apply'd to it; for this would be repugnant to reason. Hence I eafily concluded, that it was necessary for me to go back to the cause of it.

o I DID not renquire into all the different methods by which the fenfation of forrow may be communicated to the foul: all my reflections were relative only to my wants. 'Twas plain my forrow arose from the death, or infidelity of all I held dear, and the dreadful circumstances which had always been inseparable from my misfortunes. To this cause the disease of my soul was owing. I then asked myself, Whether it were probable that philosophy cou'd dry up this source of my misfortunes? Supposing it capable of working fuch a miracle, I conceiv'd there were but three methods by which it could prove effectual. The first was, to remove from that spectacle of my misfortunes, which was incessantly present to my mind, the strong ascendant it had gain'd over me; which not fatisfied with filling me with the sharpest pangs, fometimes forced involuntary cries from me; and which I myself should not have perceiv'd, had it not been for the aftonishment of those who liv'd with me, and were terrified when they heard them. What likelihood was there that philosophy could produce fo aftonishing an effect! Could even heaven itself do this without changing the nature of things? 'Tis contradictory

iffe-

of

oul:

to

ofe

eld

ces

om

he

en

ole

ce

le

d

it

0

y

dictory to think that one can lose a loved object and not be grieved. But case one loves with a most tender, a oft perfect passion; if what one loves dearly, happens to be loft by a most uel death, or the blackest treachery; hat can possibly stop the transports and ears, which these dreadful shocks must eceffarily excite? A devouring flame oes not fly swifter, or prove more fatal. was fenfible, that philosophy might offibly have preferv'd me from the exesses of love and friendship; but having once open'd my heart to those two passions, I saw plainly, that all their effects were as necessary; and that misfortunes whose strength was founded in those two causes, were above the power of philofophy, w abidw but the

The second method which philosophy might suggest to ease my sorrow, was, to endue me with as much strength to support my missortunes, as they had employ'd in making me seel the weight of them. Lovely idea! alas! since it delights my rational faculties, why does it not also work on my heart? Experience, more powerful than all arguments, inform'd me continually that the soul is not to expect any succour stom its ideas, when

these interfere with its sensations. I did not even think it possible, to image to my felf a new fituation of my foul, in which it could be less disturb'd. An increase of ftrength and knowledge must necessarily heighten my anguish, since these would have made me more susceptible of their cears, writely thele deepe

ha

re

n vi.

bn W

m

tu

E Sha

ti d

impreffions.

FINALLY, the third method was to divert infentibly the principal causes of my forrow; and to impose, as it were, upon my foul, by accustoming it infensibly to employ itself on another object. I at first look'd upon this kind of cure as wanton and frivolous; and therefore nejected it fooner than I had done the two former. I nevertheless came back to this. as being the most folid, when I confider'd it was the only one which was feafible. 'Tis certain, fays I, my mistortunes are of fuch a nature, that they must necessarily affect my mind, so long as it continues to meditate on them. Nor is it less fure, that my foul cannot acquire Arength enough to relift this fensation, either from her felf or from philosophy; and confequently, that she must lay aside all hopes of case and happiness, so long as the continues to entertain it. But why may I not hope, that the may fix on another

I did

o my

hich

fe of

rily

puld

heir

di

my

noc

oly

at

10+

10

5

G,

.

-

t

her object, which may insensibly divert r to another fenfation? So great a lange as this, cannot undoubtedly be rought in an instant; but 'tis plain it hay be brought about by flow degrees. les, fays I, this is a fervice philosophy nly is capable of doing me, or that I vill expect from her. I was, perhaps, on the point of condemning her unjustly. What I, indeed, requir'd of her is really mpossible, because it is contrary to nature; but then, what philosophy offers me here, is vastly reasonable: she may gain a complete afgendant over my mind, by filling it infensibly with those sublime truths which the will propose to its consideration; the heart, all whose impulses are blind, turns it felf infallibly towards the objects of the mind. Mine will therefore be easy, when I shall be employ'd in a peaceable meditation; and by this means, I shall attain quiet, felicity and wildom.

This reflection reconcil'd me for fome moments to philosophy. I flatter'd my felf that she would produce a wish'd for effect on me, at least for the future; and I past, from this hope, to the following reflection, viz. that 'twas undoubtedly in this sense we are to explain the elogiums

which

which have been given her in all ages and the power which has been afcrib'd to her of healing the diseases of the soul But heaven, which had furer remedies, and fuch as were better adapted to my evils in store, permitted this thought to be attended with a new reflection, which plung'd me afresh into my uncertainties; and made me conceive as unfavourable an idea of philosophy as I had ever done, She will then, fays I, cure me by divert ing my attention from my forrows. But in case this be all the power she has over our fouls, refumed I on a fudden, in what does her particular advantage confift? I don't perceive any thing in this effect that is peculiar to her felf; or which may not be justly expected from the most trite and common sciences. Why do I fay sciences? Every empty and trifling occupation must produce it much more infallibly; for the representation of a comedy, for instance; an harmonious concert of musick; a party of hunting, or an entertainment; in a word, whatever can be capable of making a strong impression on the fenses, will attract my mind more powerfully than dry and ungrateful fpeculations, which alone, have not the power of affecting my heart. The fo much boafted

ages

b'd to

foul

edies,

o my

ht to

which

ties:

able

one,

ert.

But

ver

in

on-

this

10

hy

ng

ne-

of

è

fted virtue of philosophy, and the ereign empire which it is faid to re over the passions, is, said I, in a nd of passion, then reduc'd only to is! Impotent phantom, which I have o long rever'd; and in which I had fo olishly plac'd all my confidence! No, , fays I, I will no longer be the fport vain, senseless wisdom. In case I had ason to be persuaded that heaven is so racious, as to indulge a remedy for the haladies of the foul; I should also have onfider'd, that this cannot be fuch a veak and empty remedy, as is unable o operate alone. I require one which will heal infallibly; and fince philosophy s incapable of this, I therefore suspect its efficacy, and shall henceforwards not desire its assistance.

I SHOULD have gain'd a confiderable advantage, in thus discovering the weakness of all philosophical speculations; had I, at the same time, found any thing more solid to ground my hopes upon. But then, tho' I rejected a faithless support, I did not find either my perplexity or sorrows diminish. So far from it, they were to increase; because, as I had nothing to substitute in the place of the phantom which I had destroy'd, I remain'd.

ol b oi el h

m

did in fe

oi ei

TO WOO h

main'd, in some measure, more naked and defenceless. And, indeed, I was, for feveral days after, inexpreffibly dejected. Every thing was troublesome, and feem'd to conspire to heighten my uneafiness. The authors which I had hitherto idoliz'd, now became odious and insupportable. I consider'd them as so many impostors, who had feduc'd me with false promises, and abandon'd me cruelly in my diffrefs. I now kept away from my study, purposely that I might shun their presence; imagining, that when I was in the midst of my library, I was furrounded with a multitude of false friends. I could not bear to hear Plato or Seneca nam'd before me, and more than once refolv'd to burn their works. All I did, for seven or eight days, was to walk folitarily up and down a pretty large garden, which belong'd to my house; where I was plung'd in an abyss of fatal and gloomy meditations. Mrs. Lallin and my fifterin-law were very uneafy, left I should have a fit of fickness, and watch'd all my steps; but I told them at once, that their follicitude was painful to me, and absolutely desir'd them not to interrupt my deep contemplation. THERE

ked

was,

de-

me,

my hi-

and

fo

me

me

a-

: 1

g,

91

ar

re

0

n

P

5

THERE are few people, who, were hey to relate fuch an adventure as the ollowing, but would think themselves blig'd, for reputation fake, to disguise As for my ome circumstances of it. elf, having always been of opinion, that he principle upon which we proceed, makes an action good or bad, and confequently that the motive only can make it Hishonourable; I therefore am not aham'd to give a genuine account of my felf, and to make an ingenuous confession of my faults in a publick manner. 'Tis enough that I can give this honourable testimony of my felf, viz. that my heart was ever inclin'd to follow the infoirations of virtue and wisdom; and that tho' it has sometimes been mistaken in its object, its intentions were always just and honourable.

So far from meeting with the comfort, which I expected the solitude of my garden would administer; the melancholy reflections I there made, heighten'd my affliction in such a manner, that I soon was seiz'd with a dreadful and most dangerous disease. I cannot give the reader a stronger idea of it, than by calling it an invincible batred to life. 'Tis a kind of delirious frenzy, which is found to

rage more among my countrymen, the Englift, than the rest of the Europeans. But fince this disease is look'd upon as almost peculiar to our nation, 'tis furprifing thatit should have had such violent effects upon me, I having spent so many years in foreign countries; and as I was at that time in France, which boafts fo pure an air, that my countrymen fly to it for refuge, against that gloomy disposition of the soul. 'Twould be a difficult matter for me to describe the several gradations I went through, which at last brought me to the utmost excess of folly and blindness: but a circumstance which will appear incredible to my readers, is, that I look'd, for some days, upon my furious transports, as the effect of the highest wisdom; and I don't think that I ever, in my life, form'd more methodical arguments, than those which hurried me to the brink of the most dreadful precipice. I doidy , to

r

ia h

f

ic

re

an

m di

v.e

th

e

21

'Twas the third day after I had thrown my books afide, that I observed the first symptoms of the disease abovemention'd: these were so surious, that had I had a dagger in my hand, I should, in my transports, have plung'd it into my heart. However, as there was suddenly a strange revolution in my inward faculties, I soon perceiv'd

But

non

atit

pon fo-

ime hat

inft

oul.

to

ent

the

out

re-

d.

16-

1; e,

of

n

d

rceiv'd that I was unaccountably chang-This reflection making me more atntive, I immediately discover'd, but afr a blind and involuntary manner, the ate of my foul. But a furprizing cirumstance is, that I was not any way unafy upon that account. My disorder'd rain had already depray'd my reason. instantly made the idea of death famiiar to me; and was aftonish'd only. hat I had fo long delay'd the refolution f putting an end to my life; a refoluion, methoughts, equally happy and necessary. I have sought, says I, for a remedy to heal the difease of the soul. and have now discover'd it. 'Tis simple, tis short, and perfectly well adapted to my evils. How blind was I not to have discover'd it before? Yes, says I; its feveral characteristicks are a proof of its excellence. 'Tis eafy, 'tis prefent to all the wretched; its effects are certain, and every thing but this appears distasteful and bitter. How many gates open themselves which lead to death? All I have to do, is to chuse the shortest and fafest way. bright or deport theast

My memory did not fail to suggest a great number of examples, which strengthened my resolution. I consider'd that the Vol. IV. C greatest

greatest men had made this their refuge. to rid themselves of all their evils. Will any one fay that this was owing to a want of wisdom and virtue in Cato, of sense in Demostbenes, or of courage in Mithri. dates and Mark Anthony? 'Tis therefore certain, fays I, that courage, good fense, virtue, and wisdom, are not incompatible with a voluntary death. Now, a thing which fuits fo well with the most noble qualities of the foul, all which are the gift of heaven, cannot be an evil but must even be a virtue. And indeed does not reason prompt us to wish for death? The most unruffled, the most happy foul, must necessarily groan at its captivity in the body. This is a heavy and obscure state, which she should pant to fee ended. The bonds which enthrall her are hard, mortifying, unjust and une natural; how ardently therefore should the defire to break them?

ALTHO' the resolution which I took of dying, increas'd daily in me; and that I did not perceive any thing in this which interfer'd with reason; I nevertheless had strength enough to suspend the execution of it for some days. This delay was grounded on a motive different from what might be imagin'd. I had no

ot

fle

m

m

vi

W

2

pi

at

p

al

n fe

th

r

0

a

r

V t

1

nt

ri.

re e,

1-

a

e l,

t

S

7

other view, but to justify, by new reflections, this strange action to my own mind; and to convince my felf more and more, that it would not be condemn'd by heaven. However, it cost me the most violent struggles, before I could prevail with my felf to defer it. Every instant which I added to my life, feem'd to me a theft, with regard to my peace and happiness. I spent four whole days, in re-examining the arguments which should prompt me to make choice of death; and I did not find but they were as ftrong as at first. The only objection which stopt me for fome time was the following: my foul, fays I, is imprison'd in a body by the will and ordinance of the supreme Being; and there must certainly be some reason, why he keeps her in that captivity. I cannot comprehend the mystery of his impenetrable views; but then I am fure, he cannot guide himfelf by any rules but those of infinite justice and I therefore am bound to revere them, even tho' I am in the dark as to that matter. He has mark'd out the length of my days, consequently, to shorten them, would be to violate his laws. Yes, answer'd I after a long meditation, I undoubtedly violate them, in case I am-C 2

as fully perfuaded of their existence, as that he himself submitted to them; but in case he should have chang'd them; or at least, interprets them in a different manner with respect to me, than from the generality of mankind, ought not I to obey his last will as implicitly as his first? As he has fuffer'd me to fall into the extremes of grief and mifery, he consequently has excepted me from the number of those, whom he sentences to live a long course of years. 'Tis morally impossible, as he is a Being whose essence is infinite goodness, that he should delight to see me lead a life of misery; and even the excess of my pangs, is a manifest proof that he permits me to die.

AFTER this conclusion, all that now remain'd for me, was to make choice of the kind of death, and appoint the moment, when I should lay the burthen down. These two circumstances threw me into some little perplexity. At last, I resolv'd a sword should do my business, and not to delay putting my design in execution any longer than that noon. There were several long alleys or walks in the garden, which lay at a considerable distance from the house; one of these I made choice of as best suiting my purpose. A little summer-

but

rent

om

t I

his

nto

he

the

to

lly

ht

en

ft

W

of

6

1.

0

d

fummer-house, which was in the most remote corner of it, was to be the scene of this bloody action. I first look'd carefully round me, in order to see whether I could kill my felf unperceiv'd by any one; and took all these precautions with furprizing coolness. I was not sensible of the least trouble or uneasines; my deep forrow being suspended, as it were, by an anticipated effect of my resolution. As it had but a short time to last, its fling could not be piercing. When a man is going to be rescued from a severe captivity, he reflects but very little on the evils he has fuffer'd, and the chains which are going to fall from him; he then thinks of nothing but the fweets he is going to taste, in a state of freedom and liberty.

Accordingly I walk'd back towards the house, in the utmost composure of mind; and as dinner time was very near, I thought it would be proper, in order to avoid all suspicion, to set once more at table with my family. The two ladies observ'd, that I discover'd an unusual tranquillity of mind; and hinting this to me, I answer'd them in such a manner as confirm'd their opinion. I left them as usual, and taking my sword out of my bed-chamber, I went immediately into the

C 3

garden.

tic

0

C

25

11

garden. My mind still enjoy'd a profound calm, and I did not feel the least inquietude, with regard to the life to come. I could not find that I had offended heaven in any thing; and how obscure soever my condition might be after death; I yet inferr'd a kind of certainty, from the general ideas I had form'd of the justice and goodness of my Creator, that nothing unhappy could befal me, in the state into which I was going to enter. I was now got to the fummer-house, when I unsheath'd my fword, and view'd a moment the point of it, with the utmost attention. I will not scruple to own, that I was seiz'd with a gentle kind of horror, if I may give it that name, all over me: but this, so far from meriting the name of fear, inspir'd me with a soothing reflection, with regard to the happiness of my foul; which was then going to wing its flight, towards the regions of bliss and glory. I even smil'd at the weakness of my body, and looking upon my felf with disdain; thy reign, says I, is at an end; return now to thy primitive dust: If I want thy assistance for a moment more, 'tis only to make thee thy felf contribute to our eternal separation.

pro-

least to

how

be

cer-

had

uld

Vas

he

ny

int

ill

d

C

tion. Omnipotent Being, to whom I owe my origin, added I, shutting my eyes at the same time, and struggling, as it were, to turn them inwards; take pity on thy creature, and direct my steps in the darkness whither I am going. Thou sillest all places, and therefore my soul cannot fail of being receiv'd into thy beform.

My arm was up-lifted, and 'tis certain there was now but a moment's interval between life and death. Heaven! by what miracle didft thou with-hold the point of my fword, which, by this time, was to have pierced my heart? A noise which I heard at a little distance from the fummer-house, stopt my hand on a fudden, and made me hide my fword behind me, for fear of being perceiv'd. The noise I heard was made by my children. Mrs. Lallin and my fifter-in-law, having observ'd me to be more than ordinary easy at dinner, had sent them after me; in order that their pretty prattle and tender fondling might increase my tranquillity. They came up to me, and after hugging me in the most affectionate manner, they took hold of my hands, and at the same time put several childish and innocent questions to me. I let them a-

of

er

ul

th

ft

a

n

lone for a little time, and continu'd in a kind of inactivity, the effect of my uncertainty and furprize. However, as they continu'd to carefs, and put their little, fimple questions to me, I began to attend to them; and gaz'd upon them for some time, with that tender complacency, which nature is fo apt to awake in the heart of a parent. The eldest was not eight years of age, and both of em possess'd the most amiable graces of infancy. They are going to ruin me, fays I to my felf; after my death they will be friendless and undone; abandon'd by an unnatural mother, and bereav'd of their unhappy father. What will become of them? My fifter-in-law and Mrs. Lallin have hitherto behav'd with the utmost tenderness towards them, but who knows whether they'll continue to do fo after I am gone? Will a bare impulse of friendship inspire them with humanity, since their mother was never fenfible to that? Heaven! why didst thou permit me to be the fecond cause of their coming into the world? Is not fuch an unfortunate wretch as I, a kind of monster in society? How can it be consistent with thy wisdom and goodness, to suffer a race like this to be perpetuated? THESE

In a

un-

as

heir

to to

iem

ola-

in

Vas

emi

in-

ys.

ill

y

of

n t

S

These reflections, added to the black poison which flow'd in my veins and infected my foul, led me infensibly to one of the most shocking resolutions that ever enter'd the human mind; and what will undoubtedly appear incredible, is, that in the feries of reflections which I continued still to make, every conclusion I drew, appear'd to me to tend manifestly to the most just and rational principles. I have, fays I, taken a resolution of dying, in order to put a period to a life, which is too unhappy to be borne with patience. I am convinc'd, that the Creator not only approves my refolution, but that he himfelf inspires me with it. Now if I may be allow'd to kill myfelf, in order to put a period to evils which are incurable; shall I not be permitted to do the same, to prevent inevitable ones? Let me suppose but for a moment, that I happen to be only in the latter circumstance, that is, threatned with a numberless multitude of dreadful and infallible evils: 'tis manifest, that I may do as much this instant to rid myself of a present evil, as I may do hereafter to fecure myfelf from a future one. This is the very case of my children. They are born to the fame fad misfortunes as myself; their fate is but too

too manifest. Had they nothing to dread but the contagion of my unhappiness, they must naturally expect a life of wretchedness and misery. What better office can I therefore do them, than to prevent their entrance into a series of misfortunes, by dispatching them this instant? We then shall all be wasted to a happy region. They'll die with their father. In case I consider death as a felicity, why do I delay to let my children fhare it with me?

b S

HAVING ended these arguments, I took them both up in my arms, being still seated; and hanging down my head between them both, I join'd both their cheeks to mine. I now acted without reflection, and by mere instinct. I continu'd for some time in this posture, my mind being still roving and unfix'd; and without daring once to attempt to execute the bloody resolution I had form'd. My heart, which an instant before I found so free and unruffled, was suddenly oppress'd with an unusual weight; and by an effect of this change, which I did not yet perceive, tears gush'd, by intervals, from my eyes. However, when I confider'd my uncertainty, I look'd upon it as a weakness; and thereupon rose up on a fudden.

read

refs.

of

tter

1 00

nifin-

) a

faci-

en

I

id

i-

sudden. 'Tis done, fays I; I'll die, ind they shall both accompany me in leath. As I am their parent, consequenty 'tis incumbent on me to make them happy, if possible; and therefore an idle pity shall not keep me from indulging them the only felicity I am capable of bestowing. The confusion in which I spoke these words was so great, as prevented me from confidering, that they had fense enough to understand the meaning of them; fo that feeing my drawn fword in my hand, which, as was before obferv'd, I had hid behind me, they left the fummer-house in the utmost terror. 'Tis here the reader will find it difficult to determine which was most astonishing; my filly and obstinate cruelty, or the respect and submission of my poor children. Exasperated to see them run from me, I call'd them with a threatning tone of voice; when those fearful and innocent victims, accustom'd to obey, even the most infignificant of my commands, immediately return'd back. They cried all the way, and stopping at the door, fell on their knees, as the they begg'd me to spare their lives, which they saw but too manifestly I intended to bereave them This fight struck me at once; and

de

no

w

n

I will confess that it touch'd the most intimate recesses of my heart. 'Tis impossible for the highest wisdom, or the most stupid folly, to resist the sensations of nature. My fword dropt from my hand; and so far from resolving any longer to murther my dear children, I found that I could have facrificed a thousand lives to fave theirs. This last impulse was fo delightful, that I abandon'd my felf entirely to it. Come, says I, dear unfortunate babes, holding out my arms with the utmost tenderness; come, and embrace your unhappy father; come hither, and don't be afraid. My senses were in fuch diforder, that it had chang'd the tone of my voice, and I endeavour'd in vain to stop my fast-slowing tears. They came up, when I clasp'd them to my bosom, in the utmost transports of joy, which suppress'd all their fears. The youngest, whose name was Thomas, and who was my darling, enquir'd of me, with the simplicity of a child of his age, why I defign'd to kill him? This queftion being ask'd, in a tender and fearful tone of voice, pierc'd my heart. I anfwer'd him no otherwise than by embracing him afresh; and all I could do, for fome moments, was to figh, and shed tears. NEVER-

st in-

im-

the

ions

onund

and

ılse

my

ns nd

ii.

cs

d

d

o f

NEVERTHELESS, as my imagination had been fill'd, for several days, with the defign I had form'd, and the preparations I had made to dispatch my felf; notwithstanding so great a change was now wrought in me, it yet was scarce possible for those dreadful ideas of death to vanish so very soon, and be quite eraz'd. I was fensible of the danger I was in, in case they should again present themselves to my imagination with their former violence; and therefore, being refolv'd that my children, at least, should be out of danger, I order'd them to go back into the house. They obey'd instantly, without faying one word.

Being thus left alone, I recollected the past incidents, but was at first in doubt, whether I ought to thank heaven, as though it had herein indulg'd me a favour; or reproach my self for it as a weakness. In case I suppos'd, that just and solid arguments had brought me to a resolution of dying; there was no doubt but the opposite sensation, which had prompted the execution of it, both upon my children and my self, argued a weakness of mind. But then, in case the old principle of my mother's philosophy, viz. that all the impulses of nature are just,

just, and confistent with order and regularity; if this principle, I fay, facred to her memory, by which I had fo often squar'd my conduct, was as just as it always appear'd to be; what idea ought I to entertain of my last arguments; since they oppos'd directly the most necesfary, and strongest impulses of nature? There was no medium in this cafe; for either I must acknowledge that reason had impos'd upon me, in thus prompting me to commit an action which was shocking to nature; or that the inspirations of the latter were unjust and clash'd with order and regularity, in case they were repugnant to reason, which is itself the standard of regularity. To what side soever I might turn the fcale, this could not be done 'till after a long examination; and such an enquiry was too important and too delicate, to be the work of a moment. I therefore put off the confideration of this obscure problem, which was to decide whether I should live or die. But tho' my only view in this delay, was, to prevent my undertaking any thing with a rashness which prudence might afterwards condemn; I eafily perceiv'd, that some change was wrought in my disposition. Whether it were,

bo

it

t

at the black melancholy which had iz'd me, began to dispel of itself, or hat a paternal tenderness had occasion'd strong revolution in my spirits; I pereiv'd, that I did not so ardently wish to

lie as I had done before.

gud to

ften

a]-

nt I

nce

efe?

or

nc

ζ-

ns h

Bur had my defire in that respect been more urgent, it yet would have been impossible for me to have satisfied it that day. The children were gone back into the house, as I had order'd them. Terror had been fo ftrongly painted in their countenances, that it was impossible but the two ladies must perceive it. They had enquir'd into the reasons of it; and tho' the children would not tell them the truth of the affair (which they had the discretion to hide, but upon what motive I know not) they yet discover'd enough to make them very uneasy. Their affection for me made them haften into the garden. I heard them coming down the walk; and not doubting but the strange story the children had told them, had brought them thither; I thought, with some confusion, on the part I was going to act. However, I had time enough to hide my fword before they came into the fummer-house. Being come in, I waited for their speaking.

ing. They gave me the most obliging marks of their uneasiness upon my account; but I found they were entirely in the dark, as to my late horrid design; and I endeavour'd to put on a chearfulness, which might remove every suspicion of that kind. This was never known but to my children, who could never exaze the remembrance of it from their minds; and to the lord Clarendon, who being my fast friend, I did not scruple to acquaint him with it; so that I here reveal to the publick one of my most intimate secrets.

ho

lit

W

th

ti

1

However, Mrs. Lallin and my fifterin-law, who had an eye upon all my fteps, and too much fense to be impos'd upon by appearances; would not wholly trust to the serenity of countenance which I had affum'd before them. Tho' they could not hit upon the very thing, they yet judg'd with reason, that something extraordinary must have happen'd: and being very desirous of preventing, what their friendship for me made them apprehensive of; they agreed to find out fome recreations for me, which I till then had absolutely refus'd to take. Saumur abounded with persons of merit and learning. They directed themselves to the

ging

ac.

gn;

ful,

Spi-

wn

e-

eir

ho

ole

re

7-

e most eminent of these; and acquaintg them how much I stood in need
consolation, they engaged them to vit me frequently. But as they sear'd I
ould refuse to accept of this remedy,
n case I happen'd to know they had
brocur'd it for me; they agreed with the
gentlemen who were to be my visitants,
how they should act, in order that I
might approve of the motive of their visits.

THE first who did me that honour. was one of the principal ministers of the protestant churches in France. My fervant, who had been instructed by the two ladies, came and told me, that a perfon of great diffinction defir'd very earnestly to speak with me, upon business of the highest importance. I was displeas'd at first with his importunity; however, I thought my felf oblig'd to fee him, and accordingly he was introduc'd. He had a grave aspect, when immediately he acquainted me with the design of his visit; faying, that having heard I had been for fome time in Saumur, and had a great share in the king of England's favour; he therefore thought he might address me with confidence, in order to interest me in the support of the protestant religion, which,

to

Gr

Br

mi

or

pu

ימ

fo

ft

which, he faid, was now, more than ever, in want of a powerful protector. Our religion is, fays he, at this time, th eaten'd with fo dreadful a blow in France, that 'tis on the brink of destruction. The hatred which the clergy bear us, breaks out upon a thousand occasi-We are inform'd by persons of undoubted veracity, that they are refolved to have all our privileges abolish'd; and being thoroughly acquainted with the fpirit of our perfecutors, we expect every moment to be treated with the greatest cruelty. Possibly it would be better for us to avoid the form by a voluntary flight; but then we are in doubt whether or no they will fuffer us to by. Nevertheless, as we shall one day or other be forc'd to attempt it, we think it proper to fix betimes upon an afylum; especially upon account of this university, which is confider'd by us as the center of arts and fciences, and the fanctuary of our holy religion.

Upon this, the doctor let me more particularly into his design, with regard to England. The plan he laid down was so regular, that it could not possibly have been the work of a moment; and therefore he certainly had meditated upon it, before

than

tor.

me.

Vin

ruc-

bear

afi-

un-

v'd

nd

pi-

ry

A

or

ry

a.

before the two ladies had entreated him to visit me. What he principally defir'd, was, to obtain of the king of Great Britain a place for the university of Saumur to fettle in, and he thought Winchester or Southampton the most proper for that purpose. We there, says he, will make arts and sciences flourish. So great a number of my countrymen, who would certainly leave their native country to follow us, must necessarily increase the strength and riches of Great Britain; not to mention that heaven would certainly indulge its bleffings to an establishment which should be founded wholly on piety and zeal.

AFTER having listen'd to him a considerable time, in order that I might be thoroughly acquainted with his whole scheme; I told him ingenuously, that though I had never adher'd to the protestant religion in particular; and had hitherto confin'd my self wholly to that of nature, which teaches us to honour God as the only supreme Being, and to love his creatures because they were form'd by him; yet these two principles alone prompted me to do all the service that lay in my power to my fellow creatures: that the violence and injustice of those who

Bay

VOL

VOU

tw

for

wit

cal

pr

he m

fu

th

m

id

C

who persecute religion, prompted me the more to this, as I was perfuaded that mankind ought to be free, at least in whatever relates to divine worship; and consequently, that nothing can be more unjust than to tyrannize over their consciences. I added, that this last reason had made me chuse to live in Saumur, preferable to any other part of France; because, tho' I was not directly acquainted with the tenets of the protestant rellgion, I yet had heard that one of them was, not to force any person; and to consider that worship as most agreeable to the Divine Being, which was most fincere. But, fays I, 'tis not in my power to affift you in what is desir'd of me; and I am afraid that all I can do, is to wish your design may meet with success.

This answer gave the doctor a double advantage, in the defign he had to visit me, by way of administring comfort: and he immediately put it in practice with fo much civility and address, that I did not once suspect he had been put upon it. With regard, fays he, fir, to your power, I know very well the service it may be to us, for don't imagine that you're altogether unknown in this city. We have heard of the favour which his British inte

that

At in

and

nore

CON-

a fon

nur,

ice;

int-

ell.

em

to

ble

in-

CT

nd

fh

î

0

British majesty shewed you in Roan and Bayonne; as also the services you endeayour'd to do him in the West-Indies. If you'll permit me to doubt of any thing, twould be rather of your good wishes; for fince you own you are not acquainted with the principles of our religion, I can't fee any circumstance that should prompt you to favour us. Upon this, he desir'd I would give him leave to visit. me fometimes, in order to lay down the substance of the protestant religion; and thereby engage me in its defence from much stronger motives, than the general ideas of natural equity; or the aversion I might entertain against violence and persecution.

The reader has already feen, in the course of this history, how I stood affected with regard to religion. As my mother had taken particular care, to preserve me from prejudices of every kind in my infancy, I consequently had all the liberty requisite for making a disinterested choice, when I should come to years of discretion. But this very liberty I had of chusing, had hitherto kept me from embracing any. The different opinions of which the several sects are form'd, had struck

ner

nior

mer

s to

ort

con

WTC

**Swe** 

nat

eve cle

tha

qu

nie

on

wi

OT

ce

0

me prodigiously; and having consider'd them with the coolness which is natural to unprejudic'd minds; I could not difcover any thing at first sight, which should engage me to prefer any one of them to all the rest. The arguments I had employ'd on that occasion were these. Suppose, fays I, that there are fifty fects: now there is not one of these but condemns all the rest, and imagines itself only to be in the right. But then, the remaining forty nine, which afcribe to themselves the same prerogatives, condemn it also. In case I interrogate them apart, or all together, I still find forty nine voices against one; and one voice only in its favour, and that too its own. Consequently there are forty nine motives against one, to reject the rest, and make one believe them to be absolutely falle. However, I'll suppose that forey nine only are in the wrong, which I must necessarily do, in case one is certainly in the right. Now am I ever the nearer by laying down this hypothesis? How will it be possible for me to know, which of them is in possession of that precious treafure, truth? And in case, after having weigh'd this matter deliberately, I should at last fancy I had discover'd some glimmerings

ural dif-

ich

of

s I

efe.

ts:

n-

elf

he

to n-

m

y

C

1.

-

1

nerings of light in this labyrinth of opinions; how shall I be able to depend nerely upon my own judgment, which s to be my only guide rather than on the forty nine testimonies, which will persist constantly in declaring that I am in the wrong? 'Twill be to no purpose to answer, that on subjects of so important a nature as religion is, we ought to suspect every thing which does not exhibit itself clearly to the mind; and confequently, that an inward degree of certainty, is equivalent to forty nine exterior testimonies; this answer, I say, is a very weak one; for religion is equally important to all men in all fects; and I cannot suppose with any shadow of reason, that I am the only person in the world, who is concerned for the welfare of his foul, and paffionately fond of truth.

This argument had prevented me from embracing the principles of any particular sect, either in England, France, or the West-Indies; and I had no manner of inclination to build my faith upon other people's notions. I neither had been allow'd time or opportunity to instruct my self in religious matters; so that I had always suspended the consideration of them, 'till a proper season might present itself.

th

w

of

m

ti

fu

p

fi

itself. I must add, that philosophy had fuggested a religion, which agreed exactly with what I looked upon to be rea-This I before observed in the account I gave of my government in the West-Indies; and the scheme of religious ceremonies I there drew up for the use of the favages. In a word, the highest awe and veneration for the majesty and power of the supreme Being; the utmost gratitude for his favours, and submission to his will; a great integrity, charity and temperance, had form'd the effence of my religion 'till I came to Saumur.

THE minister's proposal threw me at first into a kind of dilemma; so that I continued filent for some time before I made him any answer. What occasion, fays I to myself, is there for me to acquire new lights, which will neither make me wifer, or add to my tranquillity? As I worship the Creator of all things with fincerity, can any thing heighten the love and respect I bear him; and why should I perplex myfelf with questions which no ways concern me? However, a short reflection I made on the emptiness of philosophy, which I had exclaim'd so much against two days before, made me desirous of hearing the doctor discourse on religious

had

ex-

rea-

ac-

ious

e of

we

wer ati-

to

ind my

at

t I

ire

ne

I

th

ve ld

10

e-

ih

S

-

ous topicks. He appear'd to be a man of good sense; and I therefore imagin'd that he might suggest some new hints, which would perhaps produce the peace of mind I so much panted after, by some method I as yet was a stranger to. I continued silent for some time, to his great surprize; but at last, assur'd him in the politest terms, that I should be always proud to hear whatever he had to offer.

I CANNOT say, whether the great defire he feemingly had to instruct me, was owing to a zeal for my conversion; or proceeded merely from compassion to see me fo prodigiously dejected. The doctor left me, and return'd the same after-He laid down his instructions in a very methodical manner. In his first conversation, he laid before me a general plan of religion, in order, as he faid, that I might discover at one glance, the connexion of its several parts. I shall not repeat his words here, because they undoubtedly will not be so new to my readers as they were then to me; but I will confess that I was pleased to hear him; and that his fystem appeared so rational, that I could not but wish it were in his power to support it afterwards by folid proofs. He was overjoy'd to leave me in this frame of mind, VOL. IV.

mind, and affur'd me that his fatisfaction would increase every time he visited me.

(e

at

P

tł

to

d

a

I TOLD my fifter and Mrs. Lallin in the evening, that I had been very well pleased with the minister's conversation; and had approved of his notions in religious matters. My fifter, who could not but be very zealous for the proteftant interest, as she had been brought up in the colony of St. Helena, seem'd vastly pleased at what I told her: which Mrs. Lallin was not, she being a Roman catholic. But while she was so much mistress of herself, as to discover what pass'd in her mind, only by her silence; The was confidering, while my fifter and I continued in discourse, what methods the should employ, to prevent the effect of the minister's zeal. She did not know 'till now, that I was unsettled with regard to religion; and when she and my fifter had agreed to endeavour, if possible, to prevail with the clergyman to visit me; her only view in this was to procure a remedy to my forrows. But finding that the had innocently contributed to give me an opportunity of having an esteem for the protestant religion, and being afraid left I should embrace the principles of it; she reproached herfelf

Ction

me,

n in

well

on;

reli-

bluc

tef-

t up

aft.

rich

nan

ich

hat

e;

nd

ds

a

W

e-

0

0

t

felf for it, and thereupon refolved to atone for what she look'd upon as an imprudence of a very guilty nature; the therefore refolv'd to fearch for antidotes. to expell the poison she fancied I had drank in, the very next morning; and accordingly going to the fathers of the oratory, she was admitted to the superior whose name was father le Bane; when telling him her fcruples and perplexity, fhe begg'd him to advise her how to act upon this occasion. The father, having heard the whole affair relating to me, was himself enflamed with zeal; and did not doubt but he should be able to make a convert of me, when he was told that I had convers'd but twice with the doctor. He acquainted Mrs. Lallin with the hopes he entertain'd; and promifed to pay the a visit very soon, upon some pretence or other which he'd invent for that purpose.

ACCORDINGLY he came to my house, two or three hours before dinner, and enquiring for me, I received him in a very civil manner. This father had a subtle, and at the same time a winning aspect; his whole air was vastly engaging, and he addrest me in a most agreeable manner. The pretence he employed to give a colour to his visit, was indeed something flat

D 2

and

M

fti

fer

u

fu

ti

t

and foreign to the purpose; however, as I had not the least suspicion of the defign he was come upon, I judg'd his compliment to be sincere; and affur'd him that I was very glad the motives, which he told me had prompted him to visit me, gave me an opportunity of being acquainted with him. Never man infinuated himfelf with greater art and cunning than father le Bane did. He in a moment made the discourse turn on religion; and without discovering the least affectation, or enquiring into my principles; he gave me a sketch of the principal tenets of the Roman catholic faith, much after the same manner as the minister had done. At first I was fo much furpriz'd at the refemblance which methoughts appear'd between the two doctrines; that having as yet but an imperfect idea of both, I imagin'd the father of the oratory was a protestant. I told him, that the night before, most of the principles he now discover'd to me, had been explain'd by Mr. C- the minister; and that being thoroughly satisfied with the two fystems which I thought agreed, I only waited for the proofs of them. Gracious heaven! fays father le Bane, you do me, Sir, the highest injury, to imagine I agree in principles with Mr.

ign

ent

vas

me

ne

th

th

le

10

ut

1-

C

e

What! forfake truth, to strike into the paths of error? God preferve me from fo much wickedness! But heaven has indulged me too much understanding and uprightness, ever to fuffer me to do that. - I was prodigioully affected with his fudden exclamation. Figure to your felf, says the father interrupting me, a lawful monarch, for whom his fubjects have the highest awe and veneration, establishing such laws as will make them happy; imagine that these are receiv'd and executed for many years, by his parliament and his people, to the real advantage of the whole nation. Whilst bleffings thus pour in upon them, there starts up a few obscure persons, from among the dregs of the people; who, prompted either by private refentment, or from a love of novelty; immediately fet all their engines at work, to destroy the peace and tranquillity of the kingdom, by trampling upon these just and falutary laws. But, as these wicked innovators find it to their advantage to use discretion, in order to encrease their followers; they therefore don't attempt to overthrow all their laws at once, but censure such as they think the most grieyous, in hopes of being join'd by all fuch

'EN

de

ly

te

th

di

d

6

C

as are friends to licentiousness and independence. They indeed are so fortunate as to strengthen their party. At last, to give the better colour to their rebellion and insolence, they affect to have the utmost veneration for some of these laws. and to revere them as much as the most faithful subjects. Can you think, says the father after looking upon me a moment or two, that persons of so different a character can agree together? They, never can, fays I. Now which of the two parties, continues he, would you look upon as the right; those who are good subjects and firm in their allegiance, or ? This question, fays I, is immediately answer'd; those who observe the laws which you suppose just and useful. And how, continued he, would you have the others treated? Methinks, fays I, it were but just, and for the good of the public, that they should be punish'd as rebels and disturbers of the publick peace? You may now, fays father ke Bane, make the application. The good, the old party, are of the church of Rome. All particular fects started up fince, and the protestants were the last. These are fo many rebellious parties, who have attack'd from time to time our most holy laws ; nde-

nate

, to

: ut-

WS,

noft

ays

no-

ent

he

ok

od

or

li-

10

1.

u

laws; and in case they preserved any, 'twas only with a view of more surely destroying the rest. We resuse absolutely to agree with them, even in such matters as are common to both. We cut them off from us; and give them up to divine justice, which will punish them with much greater severity, in the day destined for vengeance.

I was not sufficiently acquainted with these principles, to hit upon such objections as might puzzle the father; I only observ'd, that in case the comparison he had made were just, the adversaries of the church of Rome, were equally guilty of solly and malignity: and indeed, says he to me, we don't meet with either sollidity or good sense in their writings.

I must own that his discourse, and the consident air with which he spoke, made some impression upon me. Nevertheless, as I was not willing to believe, without knowing why I did so; I gave him to understand, that before I could give my assent, he must be more particular. Upon that he withdrew, very well satisfied with the frame of mind he lest me in; and assured me that in two such conversations more, he would bring me over entirely to his opinion.

D 4

AFTER

AFTER the father was gone, I reflected more intenfely on what he had told me, than the reader can well imagine; and look'd upon the consequences he drew from his comparisons to be unanswera-In case, says I, his suppositions are 'tis manifest that the church of Rome only teaches the truth. He affures me, that all the other fects sprang from her, and have nothing good in them, but what they borrow'd from the mother The rest were prompted to a separation, either from a fondness of novelty, or some private resentment. In leaving that church, they renounc'd fuch of its tenets as were of too fevere and burthensome a nature, and invented others which might fuit better with their practices; and this they were prompted to, from the same turn of mind, which inclines them to hate those they have rejected. Is it not evident, that this behaviour has all the characteristicks of an unjust and criminal rebellion? - Such reflections were far from prejudicing me in favour of the protestant doctor whom I expected that afternoon.

HE came; and we had not exchang'd many words, before he found that I was not in so happy a frame of mind, as he had

left

lef

pr

to

tel

Ba

W

hi

B

0

n

ted

ne,

nd

ew ra-

re

es

n,

left me in the evening before, which furpriz'd him very much. I did not scruple to relate to him, in very near the fame the comparison which father Bane had made. He at first listen'd to me with fome confusion, but soon put on a fmiling countenance; and upon my asking him, in the fame words with father le Bane, what he thought of those rebellious subjects I then describ'd to him; he made the same answer to it as I had done. I must confess, that I was prodigiously struck at this unexpected conclu-But then fays I to him with great warmth, you either betray your own interest, or else intend to impose upon me by falshoods, which you know to be fuch.

GIVE me leave, fays he, also to use a comparison; nay, I'll even employ part of your own. Imagine therefore a king, posses'd of all the good qualities you mention'd; and governing by such prudent and necessary laws as those you spoke of. These subsists some after his death, and form the happiness of the people who obey them. Then an usurper forces his way to the throne, by fraud and injustice; and finding his tyrannical proceedings condemn'd by the laws in force; he first pre-

ta

ri

th

1

t

C

a

tends to explain them; but this he does merely to wrest their sense, and make them subservient to his passions. By insensible degrees he substitutes others in their room. As he has no other view but to maintain himself in his usurpation, he never thinks of the publick good; but daily enacts such laws as may statter his pride and avarice. In what manner soever he may have disguised the old laws, he perceives that they still condemn his proceedings, and resect a shame on his pernicious enterprizes: upon this, he forbids the reading of them, purposely to keep his people in ignorance.

But by this time, the whole face of the state is chang'd. Ignorance and a depravity of manners gain the ascendant; and a relish for goodness and true selicity, is lost by insensible degrees; so that at last, all things are in consusion. In vain any person, who perceives the unhappiness of his country, presumes to complain; for immediately the usurper employs the extremes of cruelty to keep

him filent.

Who but would imagine that the evil was not to be remedied? It nevertheless happens that a small number of his subjects, deeply affected with the publick calamity, does

in-

s in

but

he

but

his

fo-

his

his

N-

to

of

e-

calamity, undertake to open the eyes of their deluded countrymen, and do it by a short and easy method. These only take out the old laws from their obscurity, and expose them to the publick in their primitive purity; when immediately all hearts are delighted with the hopes that things will return to their former channel. Mankind fee plainly how low they are fallen; which makes them figh after their once happy condition. alarms the usurper, who immediately difplays his dreadful vengeance. But tho' he still obliges a great number of slaves, by violence and wicked arts, to submit to the yoke; he yet cannot prevent those who fuffer'd under his tyranny from breaking their chains; and tafting the fweets which those laws, they ought never to have departed from, dispense. What think you now, continues the minister, of those persons who had the courage to shake off his tyrannical yoke? They certainly, fays I, have done their duty, and acted a very wife part. The application, fays he, is very eafy; and he immediately made it to the advantage of the protestant church.

I MUST confess that I was now in great perplexity and doubt; however, after a

D. 6: moment's

the

ar

Y

OV

en

tl

t

t

moment's reflection or two, I answer'd him as follows. 'Tis plain, fays I, according to your suppositions, that justice and truth are for your church; but then you must confess, that the opposite consequence follows as clearly from the principles of your adversary. In case you can prove, that the Roman pontiff is an usurper, and that the catholic doctrines have been adulterated, I can't then fee how it would be possible for any one to refuse declaring for you; but then I shall think the same justice is due to the catholicks, in case they prove to me, that you are to be accus'd as innovators. The only difficulty then is, to exhibit your proofs so clearly, that it will be imposfible for me not to be convinc'd by what you advance. At present I have not a liberty or tranquillity of mind, requifite for hearing you in the manner I ought to do. The doctor was not offended at my answer; and affur'd me, that as nothing could possibly be clearer and more decifive, than the proofs he had to produce, I could not refuse hearing what he had to fay, without discovering a criminal indifference for my falvation. All you have in reality to do, fays he, is only to make use of your eyes. I'll open the

the gospel, and you shall read in it; these are the only weapons I intend to employ. You there will have a clear view of our own triumphs, and the confusion of our enemies .- I at last acquiesc'd with his urgent intreaties; and we agreed upon the hours which should be spent in perusing

the scriptures.

ac-

tice

hen

On-

rin-

7OU an

nes

fee

ne

I

10

it

e

FATHER le Bane did not fail of returning the next day, I told him, that as there were not yet any folid motives, which could prompt me to declare on his fide, preferable to that of his adverfary; I was refolv'd to hear the doctor first, and upon no other account, but because he had first spoke to me of religion. I therefore, father, fays I, must desire you'd give me leave to hear what he has to offer, and not trouble me with your objections; for these would make me less attentive than I ought to be to the strength of your proofs. However, the moment he has laid down all he has to fay; I then will hear, with pleasure, all you shall please to inform me of .- The father was not fatisfied with this resolution. Be upon your guard, fays he, the poison of error is vastly subtle; 'twill draw you away. I declar'd that his suspicions gave me offence; and that I should take it as a favour,

fo

m

m

r

wour, if he would flacken in his zeal, of which he had given me fome unpleafing marks. Upon my faying this, he left the room very much difgusted. Twas undoubtedly on this occasion he machinated a design which was put in execution four days after, a design which brought me into so much trouble, as was sufficient to outweigh my other forrows, had it been possible for them to be alleviated.

I saw the doctor for three days together, at certain stated hours. The fourth, at about fix in the evening, I was told that an officer belonging to the intendant of the province was very urgent to speak with me. I bid the fervant show him up; when coming in, he presented me with a lettre de cachet, (the king's command with his fignet) by which my felf and my family were order'd to be feiz'd, and afterwards to be carried to Angers. Me! fays I, with aftonishment. Alas! how comes his majesty to grant such an order upon my account? How does he even know. that I am in his dominions? Sir, fays he, the king knows every thing that passes in France; and I must tell you, that his majesty's commands must be instantly complied with. He then told me, that I must leave the city that night; and for that; of

ing

the

un-

ted

our

me

ent

ite

C-

h,

d

t

that purpose he had brought two coaches, for me and my family. I could not forbear murmuring, as I prepard for my departure; but ask'd him, whether there was any likelihood of my being immediately fet at liberty. He answer'd, that this was very uncertain; and that I had best order my affairs in such a manner, as tho' I never expected it. I underftood the meaning of these words. I thereupon fettled matters as well as fo short a warning would permit me to do; and leaving Dring to finish those things which requir'd the presence of some one of my family or friends; I fet out for Angers with the two ladies, our children, and fervants.

This mysterious journey could not but give me a great deal of uneasiness; and I tortur'd my imagination, but in vain, to find out some reasonable cause to which I migh ascribe it. I had not acted any thing criminal, either against the king or his government: England was at peace with France; and I had not liv'd in such a manner at Saumur, as should bring me under the least suspicion. Nevertheless Mrs. Lallin, who cou'dn't but be better acquainted with the genius and customs of her own country than my self, imagin'd,

imagin'd, that my folitary disposition, and the gloomy aspect I wore, had made me suspected. Be affur'd, says she, that as you had not any manner of acquaintance, you were taken for a fpy. - The coachman drove very fast; so that as Angers is but thirty two miles from Sau: mur, we got there before day-break. I expected, in order to have this scene conclude as it had begun, that we should immediately be closely confin'd. However, we stopt at a fine house; when immediately feveral footmen with lights in their hands, conducted us into an apartment very well furnish'd. We had not been long there before fome refreshments were brought us; and as our affliction would not fuffer us to fit long at table, notice was given us, as the cloth was taking away, that his lordship would be there prefently.

Tho' I could not comprehend who it was they figur'd under this title, I yet had not the curiofity to enquire who they meant. A moment after, we saw a door open, when two men drest in white, and whom I at first suppos'd to be in their shirts, advanced towards us with wax tapers in their hands. These lighted a third person, who walked after them with gra-

vity,

vity

me

clo: def

hin

cro

hu

cal

tol

fo

ca

TO

V

b

ſ

tion,

nade

int-

The

as

ik.

ne

W-

nin

t-

t

3

vity, and whose whole dress appear'd to me very extraordinary. He was tall, cloath'd in a purple cloth gown, which descended to his feet, and trail'd after him a confiderable length. A golden cross, about the length of one's finger, hung down his bosom. He had a black cap on his head, which was fquare at bottom, though the top was in a triangular form. In a word, his whole dress was altogether new to me, when Mrs. Lallin came up and whifper'd me in the ear, that she believ'd he was a bishop. We rose up at his coming in; he saluted us very civilly, but without speaking; and kneeling down, he bid us do the fame, by a fign he made. He then repeated a short prayer in Latin, after which, he rose up and seated himself in an easy chair; making figns to us, in a very polite manner, to fit down in our places.

I was impatient to know how this comedy would end; but at last he open'd his mouth, and directing himself to me, said, that it was proper so important a design as that we were upon, should begin by prayer. That as his majesty had order'd him to instruct me and my samily, he was sincerely desirous of seconding the view of so pious a monarch.

That

m

fu

fh

in

t

That he congratulated me on the refoletion I had form'd, to apply my felf feriously to religion, and to attend to the welfare of my foul: but that I was bound to thank heaven for prompting his majesty to preserve me from the danger, to which I had inconfiderately expos'd my felf at Saumur. That in delivering my felf up to Mr. C-, the minister, who was the most dangerous heretic in the whole kingdom, I had been upon the very brink of destruction. That the utmost pains would be taken to instruct me and my children, peaceably, in the truth at Angers. In fine, he affur'd me, they would behave with fo much tenderness and lenity towards me, that I should have the highest reason to be pleas'd with my felf, for having chosen France to refide in.

THESE words were fo plain, that I could not but understand the drift of them. I had moreover been told, that the popish clergy in France wish'd for nothing so earnestly as the destruction of the protestants; and did all that lay in their power to gain proselytes. My genius and turn of mind were such, that sorce and violence could never have brought me to the truth; and this I immediately.

foly.

f fe-

D the

ound

ma-

, to

my

my

ter,

m

on

the

uct

he

ne,

T-

d

h

0

mediately hinted to the gentleman. I Suppose, sir, says I, that you are the bishop of this diocese, and that I am now in your palace; I don't know whether you intend to keep me here by force, but I'll be so plain as to assure your lordship, that if I am detain'd here, 'twill be against my inclination: I was born free. Tho' I chose to reside in France for some years; there yet are no ties which engage me to confider my felf as his most Chriftian majesty's subject; I therefore expect that he'll be so just, as to suffer me to enjoy my liberty; at least fo long as I shall not commit any thing which may offend him. In case this favour is denied me, I am ready to leave the kingdom, and to return to my native country. I fpoke these words in a civil, but resolute tone of voice, at which the bishop seem'd a little puzzled. However, he continu'd to affure me in very polite terms, that his majesty did not intend to make use of the least constraint; that he himself would shew me the most candid usage; a circumstance I might be persuaded of, from the handsome reception I met with in his house, and the pains he had already taken, to instruct me; that the rest of his conduct would correspond with

Hare

had

to C

þut

W

my

the

COU

foe

go

up

a

to

ju

C

W

r

(B)

with the beginning; that he knew I was of such a rank, as merited the kindest treatment from his hands; that he was going to conduct me to an apartment; which I might look upon as my own; that I undoubtedly wanted to take a little rest after the fatigue of my journey; that all imaginable care should be taken of my children; and, to conclude, that I might entirely rely on his good offices, and rest assured to the same of th

me the utmost regard.

Upon this I withdrew, in order to take a little sleep. The bishop went away, and faid, that he promis'd himself the greatest fatisfaction in discoursing with me the next day; and, at the fame time, allow'd my own fervants to wait upon me. I was refolv'd, at my going to bed, not to continue long in this palace, prefuming that I should not be detain'd against my will. My valet de chambre awaking me the next morning, according to my orders, I bid him immediately enquire how the ladies and the children had flept. He staid only a moment, but brought me the most melancholy news. He told me, that being shewn up to the ladies apartment, he found them asleep, and therefore did not dare hare to awake them; that after this, he had desir'd one of the bishop's servants to carry me to the children's apartment, but was told they were not in the house. I was very earnest with him, continu'd my valet de chambre, to know whither they were gone, but he assur'd me he cou'dn't tell; however, says he; wheresoever they are, depend on't they're in

good hands.

Was

dest

was

ent,

7n;

ttle

hat

ny

ht

est

W

to

nt

lf

g

0

1

THESE words troubled me very much, upon which I got drest instantly; and sent to the bishop, desiring to speak with him a moment. His lordship had the civility to visit me in my apartment, when I told him my fears, which he confest were just. Your children, says he, have been carried, by the king's order, to a place where they'll be well educated. Your two fons are fent to a college, and your niece to a monastery; but then you certainly have too much good fense to complain, fince all this has been done for their good. How! fays I, my children carried off without my knowledge or confent, and this by the king's order! The bishop was going to enter into a long detail, in justification of the court; but I interrupted him with warmth, and ask'd him, whether I must look upon my self

bro

the

yea

pr

in

th

1

m

ta

fa

q

W

tl

a

u

ł

94

(B)

as a prisoner in his palace. He answer'd that I was not, and that no attempt should be made to keep me in it against my will; we only defire, fays he, that the handsome usage you shall meet with, may prevail with you to stay. You feem'd desirous of being instructed in religion; and therefore we intend to do you a piece of fervice, which furely claims fome thanks. Truly, fays I, my lord, all these proceedings quite confound me, I admire your zeal; but am no less furpriz'd at the manner in which you exercife it: Had you, at least, but consulted But no, fays I, there is nothing I abhor so much as violence. Restore me only my children; and then I protest to you, that I'll not only leave your palace, but the kingdom, to which I am no ways bound. The prelate, upon this, affum'd a graver tone; and told me, that 'twas not in his power to do this, fince the king had order'd that they should be educated in the catholic faith. This refusal exasperated me to fuch a degree, that I was refolv'd to-leave the bishop's house that instant. Adieu, my lord, fays I, I shall leave your palace, fince I am allow'd to do it. I value not what religion my children are brought

er'd,

mpu

ainft

that

vith,

You

l in

do

ims

ord,

me.

ur-

er-

ted

0-

e-

I

70

h

n

d

brought up in, fince they may chuse for themselves, when once they are come to years of maturity: but what shocks me prodigiously, is, to see us used like slaves in a country, where no one ought to have the least authority over us. Saying this, I lest the palace in spight of all the arguments the bishop could employ to detain me.

I now went to an inn, and fent a meffage to my fifter and Mrs. Lallin, to acquaint them that I was there. with some difficulty that the bishop let them go; however, finding them refolute, he at last dismis'd them, sending, at the same time, his gentleman to attend upon them; who brought me an invitation from his lordship to dine with him at his palace; but I was too much perplex'd with thinking of the resolution, it wou'd be proper for me to take on fo important an occasion, to accept of it. I therefore confulted with the two ladies, and being unacquainted with the laws and customs of France, I attended particularly to Mrs. Lallin's advice. Her opinion was, that I should ride post for Versailles; and there throwing myself at the King's feet, sue to him for justice; a hint which I very much approv'd of. As the news of what

had happen'd to me was spread all over the city, some English gentlemen who were there having the curiofity to fee me, came now to pay me their compliments, just as I was getting a horseback. I receiv'd them very civilly, and told them in few words, the defign I was going upon, when they inform'd me that I might visit the lord Clarendon in my way, who had been some weeks in Orleans. This nobleman, whose name I shall never pronounce but with the highest reverence and respect, had been so unhappy as to fall under king Charles's displeasure; after having ferv'd him very faithfully for feveral years. He was retir'd into France, but before he settled himself in it, he vifited the feveral provinces out of curiofity. I had heard fo great a character of his lordship's genius and worth, that I had a defire to be acquainted with him; not to mention, that as I was unknown to the whole French court, I flatter'd myself that he'd be so generous as to do me some fervice. I got to Orleans, which was not out of my way, in two days. Altho' the gloomy disposition of my mind, would not permit me to think of any thing like pomp; I nevertheless took Mrs. Lallin's advice, who thought it would be necessa-

ry

dif

val

on

an

a

in

W

ir

tl

t

t

F

ry for me to appear at court with some distinction, I had set out with sour servants; and stopping at Orleans, I order'd one of them to go immediately for Paris,

and prepare an equipage for me.

TOVE

who

me,

nts,

iv'd

few

on,

ght

rho

his

ro-

ce

to

af-

or

2,

i-

0-

of

1

;

0

f

e

t

I ALIGHTED at the very fame inn, in which the lord Clarendon lodg'd; when, a little after, I fent a message, by which I defir'd he would give me leave to pay my respects to him. His lordship accordingly receiv'd me in the noble manner which was natural to him; and I foon infinuated myself so far into his esteem, that he offer'd to do me all the fervice that lay in his power. As he had known the lord Axminster, I acquainted him with part of his story and my own, which immediately gain'd me his favour. His lordship seem'd to be strongly affected with my misfortunes; and I may look upon this first interview, as the foundation of the tender friendship he has lince If we did not, the always indulg'd me. very first day of our meeting, arrive at the highest pitch of mutual confidence; this was not fo much owing to a want of effeem and reciprocal inclination; as the effect of a just prudence, which forbids a man to reveal his whole foul at once.

VOL. IV.

E

His

b

His lordship gave me two hints, which shew'd how much his generosity had already prejudic'd him in my favour. The first related to the business upon which ! was going to Versailles. He advis'd me to wait upon the Dutchess of Orleans, King Charles's fifter, before I address'd his most Christian majesty. This princess, says he, is goodness itself; her highness will do her utmost to serve you; and you need no other recommendation, but your being an Englishman. He added, that he flatter'd himself with being so much in her grace's favour, that a letter from him would not, perhaps, be of differvice to me; however, that as he was fo lately fallen under his majesty's displeasure, he did not think it proper to take that liberty yet. Your father's memory, fays he to me, is so detested by all good people; that it cannot be for your advantage to pass for his son, either in France or England, so that I'd advise you to change your The honour of being viscount Axminster's son-in-law, will procure you respect where-ever you go. To corroborate what he faid, he gave me an account of the punishment which had been inflicted on the regicides in England; and with what ignominy my father's body had been

hich

d al-

The

ch I

ne to

Cing

nost

fays

will

YOU

our

: he

in

im

to

ly

he

r.

he

0

3-

been treated. I thank'd him for this double advice, and promifed to follow it. So that during my twenty four hours stay in Orleans, I obtain'd a blessing which merits the search of ages; I mean a virtuous and faithful friend. He told me, upon my taking leave, that after having travell'd some months in France, he intended to withdraw to Roan, and there spend his days; and that I might always hear of him in the abovemention'd city.

I AGAIN set out post, and being alone, my sad heart disburthen'd itself a little by a deep sigh. Gracious heavens! says I; can I ever more hope for any return of pleasure and tranquillity? After having lost all I held dear, which was ravish'd from me by death and insidelity; wilt thou still be so indulgent as to reserve me so sweet a consolation as that of friendship? Thus I spent part of my journey, in examining whether my heart was susceptible of any sensation but grief; and sound that 'twas equally impossible I should cease to be tender and unfortunate.

AT my arrival in Paris, I found an apartment had been hir'd, and an equipage bought for me; upon which I fet out without loss of time for St. Cloud, where I was inform'd the dutchess of Or-

E 2 leans

an

ma

the

ca

he

th

in

if

al

e

t

leans generally refided. This excellent princess being of so easy access, I was foon permitted to fee her; and thereupon acquainted her with the occasion of my journey, and how much I stood in need of her protection. Her highness indulg'd it me at once; and as she was to go that evening to Versailles, I begg'd leave to follow her; and likewise that she would please to instruct me how I was to act. You shall come and fee me to-morrow, fays she, in my apartment at court; and then we'll take fuch measures as may be necessary. Hearing this I took my leave, and went for Versailles, flush'd with the greatest hopes.

THE French court was at that time fo crouded and magnificent, that it was a difficult matter to find an apartment fit for me in Versailles. The king had just concluded a glorious peace with Spain, by the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle; and as he liv'd in perfect good harmony with all his neighbours; so general a tranquillity had invited a great number of foreigners; who came to be eye-witnesses of all the wonders which were publish'd of that great monarch. The ceremony of the dauphin's christening, which was soon to be solemniz'd at St. Germain's in Laye; and

lent

Was

pon

my d of

me

ing

OW

to

in

211

y.

nt

ft

0

iñ

and for which splendid preparations were making, drew thither all the nobility of the kingdom, who never fail, on these occasions, to contribute all they can to heighten the splendor of the crown. Nothing was therefore feen but magnificence in dress, and pompous equipages; and, if we were to judge by outward appearance, the king of France was at the higheft point of glory, to which ambition can The court was so crouded, that aspire. the day after my arrival I could scarce make my way through the feveral apartments of the palace. However, being at last come to that of the dutchess of Orleans, I there met one of her officers, who had seen me the night before at St. Cloud. The gentleman went in to her highness, and told her that I begg'd leave to speak to her, upon which I was immediately order'd to walk into her closet. - Things, Sir, fays she, turn very much in your favour; his majesty, who generally visits me in the afternoon, has fent word that he'll be here this morning; and therefore, pray repeat the particulars you spoke last night, in order that they may be the more present to my memory when his majesty comes. I then gave her highness an account of every thing that had past

ad

tle

te

m

u

₿

in Saumur and Angers, as I had done be-As it was impossible for me to do this, without giving her fome little idea of the gloomy disposition of my mind, she had the curiosity to enquire into the cause of it. I satisfied her highness by letting her into part of my story, and did not so much as conceal my wife's infidelity. The great attention with which fhe liftned, fhew'd that she was pleased with my relation. But after I had done speaking, I was prodigiously surpriz'd at her answer. I believe, sir, says she, I know your lady \_\_\_ I am, fays she, after reflecting a moment, vaftly mistaken if I don't.

My wife! alas! madam, 'tis impossible that persidious creature should have had the considence to approach your highness. She's far from being of a bold and assuming character: would to heavens she were not base and inconstant! She must have laid asside all pretensions to modesty, before she could have presum'd to appear before your highness; immers'd, as she is, in crimes of the blackest dye. You may be persuaded, says the princess interrupting me, that she never reveal'd them to me; but I'm sirmly persuaded 'tis she herself. About six weeks hence, this very lady address'd

be-

do

dea

ind.

the

by

and

in-

ich

led

ne

at

1

er

if

address'd me, merely as an English gentlewoman who stood in need of my protection. She was introduc'd to me, and I must confess that her person prejudiced me greatly in her favour. I enquir'd her name, and what service I could do her; upon which she desir'd me not to insist upon her answering the first question; but after having acquainted me; (the tears streaming from her eyes as she spoke) that the came from the West-Indies, and that her sufferings were inexpressible, she begg'd me to procure her fome afylum, in which the might fpend the remainder of her days. I was so pleased with her, that had she disclosed all her affairs to me, I should certainly have taken her into my houshold; but she persisted in refusing to gratify me in this particular, and only begg'd me to procure her some place Finding where she might live in peace. this, I advis'd her to retire into the monastery of Chaillot; and upon her agreeing to it, I fent a gentleman of my houfhold to conduct her thither, and recommend her to the abbess in my name. When I compare what you have now told me, with the few particulars she gave me an idea of, I don't doubt but she is your lady; ar'n't you therefore desirous of seeing her? SEE

tur

ons

lity

me

ho

21

t

SEE her! fays I with a deep figh, alas! I ought rather to shun, and endeavour to forget her eternally. However, madam, I am infinitely oblig'd to your highness for being so indulgent. Your goodness has fix'd her in a place, where I now need not fear, that she'll ever dishonour me more. Faithless creature! This then is the fruit she reaps from all her crimes! She, no doubt, intends to fpend the rest of her days in bewailing her lover! ——I pity you both, fays the princess; for, to be plain with you, I cannot advise you to see her again; and nevertheless, compassion inclines me to with her as well as I do you. As her highness had done speaking, word was brought that his majesty was coming in, upon which she desir'd me to withdraw and wait a little. I obey'd, and walk'd about the anti-chamber, revolving my usual melancholy ideas, which now prefented themselves more strongly to my imagination, than they had before done I now was fully perfuaded, for some time. that my wife was really in Chaillot. Altho' 'twas fome little confolation for me, to hear that she was now in a place where it would be impossible for her to indulge in fuch passions, as are of a criminal nature :

dea-

ver,

our

our

iere

lif-

e!

all

to

ie

ture; I yet felt the same violent emotions, as when I first heard of her infidelity. The circumstance which tormented me most, was, my inability to discover how I was inclin'd with regard to that faithless creature; and whether love had any share in my agitations. This I examin'd very fincerely, having no defign to impose upon myself; and I had so much strength of mind as to give this testimony of my own disposition, viz. that in what frame foever my mind might be, I was fure I should never desire to see her. Me! fays I, fee an infamous woman who has brought me to shame; a perfidious creature who has violated all her engagements; a cruel wretch, who has stabb'd my heart? I! see a base jilt, a hypocrite, who impos'd upon me for several years together, by a specious outside of virtue and honour; and who certainly laugh'd in herself, to find me so stupidly fond and credulous? No! I'll never fee her more. But why does her bare remembrance excite fuch emotions in my heart? Whence do those tears proceed which are now ready to flow, and the despair which preys incessantly on my heart? Did I not wish for death, to put a period to all my evils? And even now E 5

that my reason seems to have recoverd its former feat, should I not tear my hair, and vent the most mournful cries, were I to yield to the furious transports,

bl

f

which still rack my imagination?

So great was the chaos of confus'd and involuntary emotions, that I cou'd not pierce thro' it; and I incessantly groan'd and tortur'd my felf, without being able to make the least distinct reflection on the cause of my agonies. But in the midst of this distraction of mind, a page came to me from the princes, and desir'd me to walk into the closet. Sorrow was fo strongly painted on my countenance, that her highness hinted it to the king; Your majesty, says she, fees him before you; the bare fight of him melts my heart; I don't think that ever man was fo unfortunate. His majesty then was pleas'd to speak to me in the most gracious words, and afterwards turning about to the princess; Madam, fays his majesty, with regard to what happen'd at Angers, I have already told you that 'twas done without my knowledge. I leave all religious matters to the council of conscience, the', I am persuaded, they fometimes abuse my authority: but I never intended, that fuch foreigners as came

my

ries,

orts,

13'd

u'd tly

out re-

ut

d,

s,

t.

came into my dominions should be troubled upon any account; and therefore those who committed this act of injustice, shall certainly be call'd to account for it. As her highness knew, that such general promifes as these are soon forgot, and being defirous that this should not; she answer'd in the most agreeable manner, that I did not defire any person should be punish'd upon my account; all I begg'd, was, to be allow'd to fee my children as foon as possible. The king understood her meaning, and thereupon ordering an Exon of the guards to be brought in, he immediately commanded him to go to Mr. de Louvois, with the orders I so earneftly wish'd for. Upon this I withdrew with the Exon; her highness, at the same time, defiring me not to be out of the way; for I must, says she, see you again very foon.

I WAITED in the antichamber, 'till his majesty was withdrawn; and heard the company speak variously, about his visiting the princess so constantly, both at Ver-sailles and St. Cloud. Tho' I did not mix among the courtiers, to whom I was wholly unknown; I nevertheless gather'd the sense of a great part of their discourse, as I walk'd up and down alone E 6 among

among them. Some fancied that the king was in love with the princess; others imagin'd that their interviews were altogether political; and foretold very exact. ly the treaty which was concluded a little after, between France and England, against Holland; but I did not find that any one guess'd the real motive of the king's visits, as it afterwards appear'd; I mean the fecret inclination he had for one of her highness's maids of honour. His majesty never came once into the apartment, without finding fome opportunity of discoursing a moment or two with that young lady. I faw her among the rest of the maids of honour, and tho' her person did not seem to be very engaging, and that no one knew the king had a particular inclination for her; Inevertheless fancied, by some glances that from his majesty's eyes, as he left the closet, that he did not look upon her with indifference. The king's eyes must necessarily have been vastly expressive, to make me observe this circumstance, as I had never feen him before.

THE princess having sent for me as soon as the company were withdrawn, I return'd into the closet. You have the greatest reason, says she, to be satisfied

with

hers

ito-

lit-

ind,

hat

the

;1

for

II.

he u-

le

with the king's goodness; for, as he has given such strict orders, your affair will foon be done; but I am curious to know how you intend to behave with regard to your own lady. I answer'd, that I believ'd the only thing proper would be, to let her continue in the convent which her highness had been pleas'd to place her in. -Why fo, fays the princess? she's a most agreeable woman; you are young; men of your age can't do very well without a wife, and therefore I advise you to be reconcil'd to her. Are we not to indulge a pardon to fuch persons as we once lov'd with a most tender passion, especially when they discover a real repentance of their faults? Besides, I find by what you have told me, that France was not the fcene of her unhappy conduct; and you may depend upon my fecrecy. Thus, you fee, your honour will not be expos'd in any manner, and that you may live as happily with her as ever. at the little and

THESE arguments, which were rather humane, than just and rational, made a strong impression on me; and thereupon I continu'd, for a few moments, uncertain what answer to make. Her highness being urgent with me to speak, Madam, says I, at last; I must confess

8

that your highness's advice has clear'd up a doubt, which I really imagin'd it would be impossible for me to get over eafily. I could not tell whether I still had some tenderness left for that faith. less woman; but I now find, by the fond. ness with which I listen to your highnes's advice, that 'twould be in vain for me to imagine I had completely triumph'd over love: however, it will be hardly possible for me to forget my wife's guilt. When I first gave way to the fond passion I had for her, I resolv'd to love with reason; and hop'd to make my felf happy by the only two methods I suppos'd capable of rendring me fo; I mean love and wisdom. I had for many years been so blind, as to perfuade my felf I had succeeded in this particular; or, at least, that the only thing wanting to complete my happines, was, a handsome competency, which I had some reason to hope would one day be indulg'd me. Nevertheless, I was betray'd by a perfidious woman, who undoubtedly never was fincere in her love; fince the was to base as to abandon me, and in one day fap the two foundations of my happiness. Your highness, fays I, may possibly be in the dark as to the meaning of these words; but I must do my

me,

my self the honour to lay open my whole soul to you, in order to render my self worthy of the regard and concern, which you are pleas'd to discover for my welfare.

ver till h.d.s to

I THEN gave her highness an exact account of the manner of my education. and the principles by which I had always fquar'd my conduct. I did not fo much as conceal either my name or my birth ; and at the same time told her the advice which the lord Clarendon had given me; and affur'd her highness that my story should have been conceal'd to all but her felf. At last, after having given her a genuine account of whatever had befallen me; of my wife's infidelity, and the fad circumstances which had attended upon it; I concluded with relating my adventures in St. Helena, Corunna and Saumur. Such, madam, fays I, is the abyss into which my wife has plung'd me. She has not only rob'd me of the felicity which arose from her love; but likewise made me lose the happiness which I imagin'd was so strongly founded, I mean on wisdom. I had hitherto consider d my philosophy, whether it were real or delufive, as a fource of light and strength; but fince the misfortune which oppress'd

(B)

the, I find her to be nothing less than what I had imagin'd. Suppose she had been only a shadowy and fictitious being, she yet had the power to calm my foul, and administer'd comfort, when the evils were not beyond her reach; but fince I have lost that which was to make me completely happy, in conjunction with wisdom, the dictates of philosophy are now of no effect. Thus my natural affections and understanding partake equally of my misfortunes. The former thereby lose all their delights, and the latter its strength and support. This fill'd me with despair, and I wish'd to die; and now, madam, would you advise me to be reconcil'd to the person who has been the cause of all my calamities?

m

m

n

THE princess looking upon me with astonishment, I said to her; Madam, I believe you find something very singular in my sentiments, and the turn of my expressions; and 'tis this, or I am very much mistaken, occasions the surprize, which methinks I discover in your highness's eyes. To speak the truth, says she, you appear to me a very extraordinary person; and I must consess that what I have now heard, is wholly new to me. However, since you govern your self by such

than

had

ing,

oul,

vils

e I

me

rith

are

af-

al-

e-

er

le

d

0

1

fuch wife principles, (and how few do fo!) I shall value you much more upon that account. The older I grow, and the more experience I gain, the more I find mankind in general to be false and criminal. I am refolv'd to make your moral system familiar to me; and affure you, that I shall be glad to have such a monster as you often in my company. But, by the way, I think you don't argue justly. Because your lady has depriv'd you of all the foft fenfations of love, and made philosophy of no use to you; you thence conclude, that she does not deferve ever to be feen any more by you: now I, on the contrary, am of opinion, that you ought, for your own fake, to be reconcil'd to her as foon as possible; in order to enjoy again those pleasures which love and philosophy dispense. Alas ! madam, fays I to her, what pleasures can I expect from love, after the false creature has us'd me fo barbaroufly? Your highness thinks that I may again be captivated by those charms which once had so fatal an ascendant over my heart; fuch as her lovely eyes, her fine shape, and the feveral graces which shone throughout her whole person? These, indeed, fir'd my foul; but your highness may be affur'd.

**(P)** 

affur'd, that I should only have admir'd, had I not fancied they were heighten'd by other things, which were much more worthy of inspiring love. That rectitude of foul; that modesty, sweetness, and an hundred other beautiful qualities which I fancied I had discover'd in her mind, either never existed at all, or are quite extinct. But, supposing honour were quite out of the case, what should I now do with her? I should continually exclaim against her inconstancy and baseness; and all my glances would dart complaints or reproaches: my very filence would be a strong censure; and the' I could be fo much mafter of my temper, as to affume a calm, unruffled countepance; would this either make me happier, or she less guilty? But you own, fays the princefs interrupting me, that you still have some love for her, Love heals wounds of every kind, and throws a veil over all faults .- I will confess, says I, that I still love her; but then I am persuaded 'tis a weakness. You'll never get the better of it, replied the princess, smiling; and since it will one day gain the afcendant, you had better let my intreaties serve you as a pretext, fince by that means you'll fecure your do toll. own

own honour and that of philosophy?

pir'd.

ten'd

more

ecti-

ness,

lities

her

are

our

uld

ally

ife-

m-

ace

1

Property and

This conversation, which was spun out to a much greater length, was attended with very happy consequences; for it inspir'd the princess with so much affection for me and my family, and fo great concern for my interest; that it prompted her to act the part of a mother to my children, and to be my protectress in a court where I was wholly a stranger. She was pleased to defire me to hire a house in her neighbourhood at St. Cloud, in order that I might visit her often; and accordingly I hir'd one which was very agreeable and commodious, before I return'd to Anjou; and order'd fome of my people to furnish it during my absence. Upon this, setting out, I pass'd thro' Orleans in my way to Angers, but did not meet with the lord Clarendon in that city, he being gone for Poittiers three or four days before Being got to my journey's end, I went immediately to Mrs. Lallin and my fifter; and found that the king's orders were not only arriv'd, but put in execution; my two fons and my niece Bridge being in the house with them. The ladies affur'd me, that the bishop had shewn them the kindest treatment during my absence, for which reason

(B)

reason I thought it my duty to return him thanks. I don't know he came to hear, of the powerful protection I had already gain'd at court; but the' he had treated me with the utmost civility in his palace; I observ'd something in his carriage and his offers of fervice, still more obliging than what he had before indulg'd me, which I ascrib'd to the news he had heard from Versailles. I could not, however, forbear taking notice, with a pleasant air, that his majesty did not approve of violent proceedings. The bishop took my meaning; and to justify his conduct, related the following particulars. Father le Bane, says he, superior of the oratory, told the intendant, by letter, that he knew a foreigner lately settled in Saumur, who feem'd defirous of instructing himfelf in religious matters, but was unhappily fallen into the hands of Mr. Cthe huguenot minister; and therefore, in all probability, not only himself, but his whole family, would foon be infected with herefy. The intendant, upon his receiving this letter, transmitted it immediately to me; and I will own to you, fays the bishop, that the great concern I have for your eternal welfare, prompted me to get you fecur'd and brought into this I CALCH

eturn

me to

had

e had

n his

arri-

e ob-

ver.

air,

io-

my

rener

he

r, n-

)-

n

this city; and upon hearing that you was a person of distinction, I offer'd to take you into my own house, and to instruct you my self. Perhaps the intendant may have been a little too officious; but these gentlemen will be obey'd, in the several provinces, with an almost absolute authority. They have a great many blank lettres de cachet, which they fill up whenever they please; so that their whole proceedings seem to be by the king's orders. I appear'd well satisfied with this justification, which threw the whole blame on the intendant.

I now thought of removing to St. Cloud with my whole family and furniture. Shall I be so weak as to make the following confession? Notwithstanding I was so highly exasperated against my wife, 'twas some pleasure to me to think that I should now be near her, Chaillot not being above three miles from St. Cloud; and though I endeavour'd to banish this idea, as arguing the greatest weakness; it yet was continually present to my imagination throughout the whole journey. The tumults of my foul were fo visible in my countenance, that the two ladies told me every day they were furpriz'd, time had so little effect upon my forrows.

➂

forrows. Being now arriv'd at my house which had been completely furnish'd, Mrs. Lallin and my fifter were very well pleas'd with it. There was a large garden belonging to it, a little grove, and every thing that can form an agreeable folitude. The next day I waited upon the princess to pay her my respects, and acquaint her with the arrival of my family. Her highness did not wait for my defining the liberty to prefent my children to her, but prevented me by faying; I defire you to bring them this evening; for I would have them know the way to my palace as foon as possible. After having thank'd her highness in the best manner I was able, for her uncommon goodness; I mention'd my fifter to her, who spoke our tongue fo well, that the might very eafily pass for a native of England; which I had no fooner done, but this excellent princess bid me bring her also. I was afraid that Mrs. Lallin would be very unreafy, should any endeavours be us'd to make her more known than she defir'd to be; and indeed the melancholy fcenes of life flie had pass'd thro', made her justly fond of retirement; I my felf had applauded her refolution in this respect, for which reason I never once mention'd her to the princess. As

IID

As I was leaving the palace, I faw a fplendid coach coming into the court, and enquiring whom it belong d to, was told the ford Terwill. Tho' I was not personally acquainted with that nobleman, I remember'd he had been viscount Axminster's old friend; and that the latter had made over part of his estate to him. I at first was resolv'd to speak to him; but a reflection which my own unhappy fate fuggested, and that of his noble friend's unhappy daughter, prevailed with me to go away, without speaking to him. I confider'd, that it would be improper to acquaint him fo foon with my affairs; and the fear I was under left her highness should let slip any particulars relating to me, in discoursing with him, made me return to my apartment, and befeech her not to tell his lordship who I was. My meeting him, increas'd my forrow to fuch a degree, that I was almost beside my felf as I was returning home. Heavens! fays I, what ignominy is reflected on vifcount Axminster's memory! How will it be possible for me to see any of his friends, without mentioning his daughter, and confequently without revealing both her father's fhame and mine? How can I be able to conceal, what must be so strongly imprest

house, uish'd, y well garden every itude.

incess
ther
Her
iring
her,
estre
or I

iner els; oke ery

ich ent a-

to to of

y

imprest on my countenance, though it were possible for me to disguise it in my discourse. Alas! the lord Terwill was formerly an eye-witness to lady Ax. minster's misfortunes, and he now must hear of her daughter's infamy! It will not only come to his knowledge, but that of all England. Thus will relentless fate persecute the unhappy viscount Auminster, even after death: He hardaly enjoy'd a moment's ease or satisfaction in his life time, and now he will be dishonour'd in his grave. Indeed, I could not fee how it would be possible for me to avoid acquainting lord Terwill with my wife's wretched ftory, in case I declar'd my felf to be viscount Axminster's fon-in-law; and yet I could not dispense with doing this for my children's fake, who otherwise would be depriv'd of part of their grandfather's estate. To confess the truth, the principal motive which engag'd me to fettle for some time in France, fince my landing at Nantz; was, the hopes I entertain'd, that the fad story of my misfortunes would be forgot before I went for England. Twas for this reason that I dismis'd my failors, and fuch persons about me whose difcretion I was a little fuspicious of; being refolv'd

ugh it it in Terwill y Axmust t will bur elenicount hardfatiswill d, 1 Tible rwill ase I ter's ense ike, part onich in as, togot for

rs,

il.

ig d

refolv'd not to have any one follow me to England, who had it in his power to disclose such circumstances as I desir'd to bury in eternal filence. However, Ihad not call'd to mind, that as lord Terwill must be in years, I should run the hazard of depriving my children of part of their inheritance; in case I should delay any longer to make them known to him. Neither had I consider'd also, that it would perhaps be a difficult matter for me to prove the just right they had to it, by vertue of their birth, and the viscount's last will. 'Tis true indeed, that when he was upon his death-bed at Pensecola, he had recogniz'd me as his fon-in-law and heir, by a note fign'd by himself; but 'tis well known, that when an instrument is not executed in a legal manner, it may be eluded; and tho' I had no reason to doubt of the lord Terwill's integrity, I naturally concluded that he would defire some stronger testimony, than a bare fignature, and the word of a person who was unknown to him. My wife's presence alone, would, at once, remove all these difficulties; and what pretext could I invent, to disguise the real cause of her absence?

VOL. IV.

F

As

**B** 

As these reflections only heighten'd my perplexity and forrow, I refolv'd to acquaint her highness with them that evening; and by that means engage her farther in mine and my family's interest; accordingly I waited upon the princess at the hour appointed, and had the honour to present my fifter and our children to her; and she receiv'd them with that goodness and affability, which made her the delight of the French court. niece was a very amiable child, and not above twelve or thirteen years of age. The princess indulg'd her the highest marks of her favour, and promifed the should be of her houshold, when she was fifteen years of age. The conversation turn'd for some time on generals, when I at last took notice of my meeting the lord Terwill in the morning as I was coming out of the palace. I afterwards told her highness the confusion this had thrown me into; and how perplex'd I was at the thoughts of my being obliged to discover myself to him, for the sake of my children. The princess judg'd what it was that gave me pain, without my explaining myself very far. I suppos'd, fays she, by your so earnestly desiring me not to name you to him, that there

was fomething between you. However. I know him to be a man of honour; and you may be perfuaded that he will not make an ill use of the confidence which viscount Axminster had in his friendship. He'll make but a very short stay in France, and is come purely upon my af-Tho' I have no authority over his lordship, you may depend that he'll foon, at my request, give up whatever belongs to your children. You have no occasion to speak to him upon that account, for I'm fure he'll do it at once at my bare request. Was not this, fays she, what you desire, and what you possibly were afraid of asking me? I answer'd her highness, that 'twas much more than I defir'd; and that I could not have expected all this from so great a princess, had I not known her to be goodness itfelf; but won't, fays I with submission to your highness, his lordship think it a little strange, to be asked to give up what he has in his hands, without knowing to whom? I observ'd farther, that I could prevail so far upon myself as to tell my lord who I am; that I should even think myself oblig'd to pay my acknowledgments to him; that therefore the only difficulty was, how I should conceal my wife

iten'd
'd to

rest;

nour n to that

My not

age, heft fhe

was tion en I

ord ing her

wn the

cony

it xd,

ng re

re

wife's irregular conduct from him, which I look'd upon as impossible in case she must be discover'd to him; and at the fame time know that we don't live together. I take you, fays her highness; but the difficulty is not so great as you ima-Your lady has wifely chose to retire from the world, and 'tis probable she'll never leave her solitude. Can't you tell lord Terwill that she's dead? Don't be afraid that your lady would ever attempt to contradict that report, should it ever come to her ears. highly approv'd these hints, and therefore, fays I, madam, I am perfuaded this is the only course I can take; and I don't doubt but his lordship will look upon what you affirm in my favour, to be as valid, as any thing my wife can fay. But fure was ever man more unhappy than I! Pardon, madam, fays I with a deep figh, this involuntary cry, which my grief and ill fortune forces from me. You see me reduc'd to the fatal necessity of employing artifice to conceal what ought to be my greatest glory, and which will now cover me with shame and ignominy. Gods! I therefore don't dare to fay my wife is living! She is dead with respect to me, and much more so then with. which

e she

t the

toge-

ima-

e to

oba-

ad?

ould

ort,

-

ereded

nd I

ok

to

ay.

Py

1

ch ie.

li-

at

)-

to

n h, with regard to the rest of the world, who will now believe she is in her grave!

THE fensation which arose from these words was fo violent and bitter, that I felt the tears trickle from my eyes, at which I was asham'd, and therefore dry'd 'em immediately. Her highness was struck at feeing me; for 'tis fcarce possible for a person to hear the natural expressions which flow from deep anguish, and not be mov'd: I even observ'd that a tear stood in her eye; however, she asfum'd a fmiling countenance; when she reproach'd me for my weakness, and laugh'd at my philosophy. I answer'd, alas! madam, either your goodness is wanting, or you fee plainly that 'tis most necessary to me. As for philosophy, I at once give it up, as a useless mistress whom I have ferv'd to no purpose, and that always fails me when her affiftance is most necessary. But in case any thing is more capable of fuccouring me than philosophy, 'tis your highness's compassion; I therefore beseech you not to refuse me the testimonies of it. Let me alone, says she; I have thought of a remedy which will be more efficacious than you imagine, and I'll take care to fend it you. Saying this, we left her highness, who then

8

then desir'd my sister to come and visit her often with the children.

I HAD taken care to chuse a lone house near St. Cloud. as was before observ'd, and fuch as fuited with the defign I had of living as retir'd as possible. The wood or grove that belong'd to it was spacious enough; in the most folitary part of which there was a little house, confisting of two rooms and a closet, which were fit to repose in, after the fatigue of a walk. This hermitage I generally retir'd to, and furnish'd it very prettily: and tho' I did not hope to meet with any farther fuccour from reading, I nevertheless bought so many books, and put into it, as made a little library. Here I propos'd to pass the greatest part of my time, that is, those hours I should not spend with the princefs. I us'd myself never to be out of it, but at the hour of meals; and would often have my victuals brought thither. I led much the same life here as I had done in Saumur; in reflecting incessantly on the calamities I had met with; in begging heaven for that peace which I could no longer expect from men; in fometimes turning a book over, but distracted by a thousand cruel reflections, which prevented my taking a delight in what I read:

vifit

ouse

and

d of

700d

ious

of

ting

vere

alk.

to,

o' I

her

less

it.

s'd

nat

he

it,

en

d

in

C

0

at other times oppress'd by the violence of my inward pangs, when I would throw myself on the bed, but found sleep, instead of easing my tortures, a fresh source of disquietude, by the fatal and terrifying dreams with which my imagination was rack'd.

ONE day word was brought me, that a clergyman, fent from the princess, defir'd to speak with me. My mind was then in one of those gloomy situations, in which my forrows feem'd to prey upon me with redoubled violence. However, I order'd the fervant to bring him to me. This person was a jesuit. All I knew of this fociety was its name; except that I had heard fome particulars concerning it, which did not much redound to its credit. Being therefore prejudiced against the French clergy, as was before observ'd, ever fince the troubles they had brought me into at Saumur; I certainly shou'd not have allow'd him admittance, but merely upon her highness's account. I that instant thought, that the jesuit brought the remedy which the princess had hinted to me; and I began to fear, that 'twas of the same nature with that which the minister of Saumur, and father le Bane had administer'd, viz. such

F 4

an

mi

for

to

to

per

ill

fo

to

le

bi

to

D

n

p

➂

an one as would only heighten my uneafinefs. The ecclefiaftic was introduc'd into my library, when he address'd me in a very civil manner, and I found him as polite, and not quite so affected as father le Bane. He told me, that among the feveral commissions with which her highness had entrusted him, he would open with that which he look'd upon as the least important, tho' at the same time it was greatly fo in itself; but added, that he gave it this name, because he was senfible that I had very little esteem for the advantages which it would procure me. He then gave me a paper, the contents of which were in English, and defir'd me to read it before he explain'd himself farther. This was an instrument fign'd by the lord Terwill, by which he acknowledg'd that viscount Axminster at his leaving England, had made over certain possessions to him, an inventory whereof was there inferted; and oblig'd himfelf, by this instrument, to restore them to fuch of the viscount's heirs, as should make good their title. He added, that as he did not know these heirs, he therefore had thought himself bound in honour and by his conscience, to cause this declaration to be drawn up, in order to prevent

vent any divisions and disputes which might arise after his death; and therefore had thought proper to make it over to Henrietta Maria, dutchess of Orleans; to be dispos'd of as she should think proper, having had the greatest experience

of her humanity and justice.

un-

uc'd e in

n as ther

fe-

gh-

pen the

e it

hat

en-

the

ne.

n-

le-

rd

nt

he

at

1-

e-

1-

n

d

It

-

r

t

WHAT I admir'd particularly in this illustrious princess, was, the former of those yirtues, which had prompted her to follow with fo much care and address, the method which was most conformable to my defires. This instrument not only fecur'd the inheritance of my children, but rid me of a thousand inconveniencies I should otherwise have been expos'd There now was no longer occafion of employing artifice in order to impose on lord Terwill, by pretending that my wife was dead. Both of us were difpensed from appearing, since her highness was pleafed to take the whole management of this affair in some manner upon herself. As to the satisfaction I had propos'd to meet with, in making myfelf known to lord Terwill, I was not now oblig'd to be so hasty in that matter; and I flatter'd myself that I should one day or other meet with an opportunity for that purpose. Hence 'tis plain that the F 5

₿

fervice her highness had done me, was accompanied by every thing that could heighten its merit, whether I consider'd the circumstances, or the effects which would refult from it.

I DESIRED the jesuit, in case he went back to St. Cloud, to return the princess the utmost thanks, in my name; being resolved to go and acquit myself of that duty forthwith. But the father, upon my telling him this, interrupted me just as I was rifing up: Hold, fir, fays he; I have not yet acquainted you with the commission of greatest consequence. We must, fir, after having taken this care of your worldly interest, endeavour to be of fervice to your quiet; and I am mistaken in what her highness told me, if you have not this most at heart. I was very much afraid, upon hearing these words, that the princess had let him too far into the fecret of all my pains, for which reason I made him no answer. But I found by the fequel of his discourse, that he had only been inform'd in general, that I had found the severest treatment both from love and fortune. I know, fays he, that you have met with unparallel'd calamities; that you have long fought for a remedy; and that neither philosophy, your converfation

fation with the minister in Saumur; with the father of the oratory, or the bishop, cou'd administer the least ease. But, dear fir, to whom did you address your self? to philosophy, a decrepit old creature, who, in her youthful days, had nothing amiable belonging to her but a name; who was perhaps capable of making fools, but never to procure happiness; and is now fit only to amuse children in schools: To whom did you address your felf? to a protestant and two jansenists! good God! what hands were you got into! and how could you expect a remedy, from things which are productive of the greatest evils? Return thanks to heaven, fays he with an air of triumph, for having fav'd you from the poison of empiricks, and preferv'd you to receive the fuccour which I am now going to offer. Saying these words he rose up, and casting his eye on my books, and spying only philosophers, antient and modern; what do I fee, fays he with the same tone of voice; fools, madmen and blind wretches? O fir, fir, can the fophisms and illusions of these impostors impose upon you any. longer? How can you return to a fource, which you found was made up of vanity and corruption? If I may advise, throw

was could der'd

hich

went ncess eing that

pon just he;

We of

e of ken ave

ich hat

the n I by

by ad ad

ve

;

n

8

throw them all into the fire; and when you shall be dispos'd to listen to my instruc. tions, then let me compose your library,

an

ju

fa

W

fi

t

I should but faintly express the fire, the ease, the politeness and gayety with which he pronounc'd these words. This made me immediately conclude, that the person who now spoke to me was a church-fop; and telling her highness my thoughts on this matter the same evening; she affur'd me that this name not only fuited the person she had sent to me, but the greatest part of the society to which he belong'd. I know not, fays fhe, whether I shall make 'em a compliment, when I affure you that I like them upon that very account; and among the feveral orders of friars, there is none affords me so much diversion as this. These can assume every shape at pleafure; we perceive fomething so sparkish, fo gallant in all their actions; that every person who has some taste for pleasure, must be delighted to have them perpetually buzzing about him. Their prefence and their habit gives a fanction to a thousand things; and we indulge our felves, without the least remorfe, to every thing that pleases. As for my own part, continues the princes, I will own that they make me fond of religion; and I can't think why 'tis look'd upon to be so severe a thing, in case it be really

what they represent it.

hen

ruc-

ry.

He,

rith his

the

1 2

my

n-

ot

to

ty

ys i-

m

ne f-

S.

.

,

I THOUGHT this character the more just, as I my self had already made the fame reflections, while I was discoursing with the jesuit. Tho' his carriage furpriz'd me a little at first, I confess'd to him that I had reap'd very little benefit from philosophy, or the religious converfations in which I had been engag'd in Saumur and Angers. I added, that the false steps which had been taken in those places, had prejudic'd me very much against any consolation which might be administer'd to me in a religious way. I have now, fays I, lost all hopes of every kind, fince philosophy proves ineffectual, and I find so little succour in religion. To this he answer'd, that I had loft the latter too foon, but that he'd foon give me an opportunity of recovering it: that he was pleased to find me resolv'd not to be led on after a blind way; that he lov'd to employ reason in all things; that as all the arguments he had to propose, were founded on the most solid principles; he therefore was not afraid of declaring the remedies he had to offer, being

b

tl

C

h

**B** 

ing fully persuaded, that I should immediately approve them. Give me leave, says he, to explain them in one word. We will begin by rejecting philosophy, unless you shall think fit to call the new system I am going to propose by that name. As for religion, it will be of great use to us; but then I shan't engage you in such obscure and knotty questions, as were perhaps propos'd to you in Saumur and Angers; but shall borrow such particulars from it only, as are most agreeable, and at the same time most ne-

ceffary.

You must first suppose, says he, that confidering the gloomy fituation of your mind, two things must be done in order to effect a cure: the first is, to efface the remembrance of your afflictions; and the fecond, to make your heart fufceptible of pleasure. Altho' these objects feem at first sight to refemble one another; you will yet find them vaftly different, in case you consider them attentively. I shan't now describe minutely the methods I intend to make use of; fuffice it that religion will be of service to the first of these designs. ... Alas! says he, turning his eyes towards heaven, would it could contribute alone to the fecond!

nme-

eave.

vord.

phy,

new

that

en-

otty

you

'OW

oft

ne-

at

of

in

.

fecond! but we are form'd of flesh and blood; that is to fay, we are not most delighted with spiritual pleasures. Nevertheless, this sad and dejected heart requires to be footh'd. I hear its fighs and I easily discover its cravings. Gracious heaven!--Let me take my course. I know what it wants, and am certain that it will obtain a wish'd for calm, when once this is obtain'd. Thus will I lead you by two paths which will terminate in happiness. By the one, you'll be freed from the importunate melancholy which preys upon your spirits, and peace will be restor'd to your mind. But then, a bare exemption from pain, is not enough to make you happy; especially after the tedious, the dreadful sufferings you have labour'd under. By my affistance your heart shall again be fensible to the fost motions of pleasure, and this I promise to bring about imperceptibly. Once again, fir, I beg you to put some confidence in me, and then all will be well.

SUCH random promises as these could not easily inspire me with the considence which the father desir'd me to entertain. However, the respect I ow'd the princess, who had sent this new comforter to me, oblig'd me to shew him some marks of es-

teem

hor

fola

bee

ver

COL

me

ho I

hi

fo

it

e

(B)

teem and approbation. This made him more urgent with me; and taking the civility I continu'd to shew him, for an absolute consent; he told me at his going away, that he would immediately prepare what was so necessary to my peace, and return the next day, when he would

explain himself farther.

I HAD the honour of being admitted that evening to the princess, when I thank'd her for the two favours she had indulg'd me that day. I gave her an account of every thing that had pass'd between the jesuit and me, when her highness form'd the judgment I have already taken notice of; and tho' I had no manner of inclination to make a trial of the method he propos'd; yet as the princess was urgent with me to submit to it, I was oblig'd to acquiesce. What risk, fays she, will you run? If you consider it only as an amusement, it will, at worst, divert your disquietudes for some time. You don't know what a comical kind of creatures these jesuits are. Upon this, I consented to hear what the father had to fay. As I did not agree to this, merely from the thoughts that it might be a diversion, as her highness affur'd me it would be; neither did I do it from the hopes

the

an

ng

e-

e, ld

d

d

hopes that it would prove of some consolation. And indeed I should have been very much mistaken, since the adventure it engag'd me in, sill'd me with consussion and anxiety, and occasion'd me to blush a thousand times at my weakness.

THE jesuit return'd to visit me, at the hour he had appointed. That morning I had receiv'd a cheft of books from him, which he had carefully collected for my perusal; however, I did not open it in his absence. He came about noon. As I had invited him to dine with me, care had been taken to provide a handsome repast. The father did honour to the entertainment, by eating prodigious heartily of every dish. Dinner being ended, he open'd his morality with some reflections on the pleasures of the table. You have, indeed, fir, fays he, treated me in a most splendid manner; but what occasion was there for this abundance, or rather profusion of dishes? I told him naturally, that I had made this entertainment purely upon his account, and that I my felf was vaftly indifferent with regard to dainties. Sir, fays he, you don't take me: I am far from condemning a moderate relish for good chear; and I even

lit

el

P

n

f

fa

0

d

C

C

B

even believe that this kind of pleasure has its share too in forming what we call a happy life: but then methinks, a man of sense, should not make it consist fo much in a multitude of viands, as in neatness and delicacy. As for instance, you can't be too careful that your victu. als be well dreft, nor be too nice in the wines you chuse for your ordinary drinking. But then, what occasion was there for fo great a variety of dishes and liquors? Be affur'd that we fuffer for this fooner or later; our taste degenerates; we feed upon pernicious food, and you can't imagine how greatly this prejudices our happiness. I'll affure you, says I, I make very little distinction in the dishes that come before me: my forrows make every thing bitter, and change the most wholesome nourishment into poison. Let me alone, fays he; I know what must be done to make you recover your taste. We'll begin by the affections and the understanding, and you'll find how naturally every thing will follow from my principles.

We then went to my summer-house, whither I had order'd the chest of books to be carried. The jesuit open'd it before me, and taking out the volumes, gave them to me one by one. The

THE first he put into my hands was a little French catechism, written by one Canissus, a jesuit. This, says he, is a little golden book; 'tis the effence and elixir of religion. Read but this little piece, which you fee is hardly bigger than my finger, and in less than an hour you'll know as much as all our doctors and bishops; nay as much as the pope himself, fays he with a smile, leering at me by one corner of his eye. Stop here; don't deviate from the principles which it inculcates, and you may depend upon being as firm in religion as a general He next presented me with a work, entitled, Devotion made easy, written also by a jesuit. This, resumed he, is for morals, the other is for doctrine; the former includes the law, the latter the practice of it. You'll here find every thing that is necessary for salvation, and will be furpriz'd to fee how matters are foftned. When once you have perused this work, you'll never have occasion for any other. You and I will read it over together. Here you'll meet with a cure for all your troubles, or you'll find it no where. He after this drew some other books of devotion out of his pocket, in the same strain, all which

afure t we ks, a onfift

as in ince, ictu-

inkhere li-

this es; you

ces , I hes

ke oft et

ist e.

n-

y

3

ins

ce

an

no

th

th

V

to

C

B

which he applauded successively. Put these, says he, in the room of your Plate and Socrates; and read them every day for an hour or two.

As a much greater number of books remain'd in the cheft, I waited impatiently to hear the titles of them all. How. ever, he did not do this, 'till after he had declar'd the use of them by way of prelude. He observ'd to me, that as it was not possible for the mind to have always a relish for serious things, it was necesfary to yield to that weakness of nature; but that there were such things as profitable amusements, which a well-dispos'd mind knew how to make advantage of: that I was particularly oblig'd to make this experiment whenever it was necessary; that the books he was going to offer me, would amuse the affections and understanding at the fame time; and consequently, that nothing was better adapted to forward the faccess of the design he had explained to me. Having faid this, he read the titles of several books of poetry, novels, and romances; affuring me, that they were the productions of the greatest genius's of the age; and advis'd me, to read these pieces, particularly, as often as possible; in order to prevent my giving Put

Plato day

ooks

oati-

OW-

had

ore.

Was

ays

cef-

re;

ofi-

s'd

hat

ex-

old

ng

y,

orad

he

y,

at

2,

en

yg ing into meditation, which, he affur'd was of dreadful consequence, both to me, and to all persons in my circumstances. I not only had never heard of the amusing works abovemention'd, but had not even the least idea of the subject of them. I took them from the jesuit; and tho' I hop'd, upon his bare word, that they'd be of some advantage to me, I yet would not form a judgment of their merits, till after I had examin'd them.

WHAT I now, fays he, put into your hands, is only to prevent retirement from being a burthen to you; and I hope to be here frequently, in order to affift you in a more folid manner by my difcourses. I at the same time would advise you to go more into company. Her highness will always be vastly glad to see you in St. Cloud. And as courts and gilded roofs don't always administer the greatest pleasures; I have procur'd you an acquaintance, who will fuit your humour wonderfully, and consequently be vaftly pleasing to you. This person lives in the neighbourhood; I have already represented your character to him in the manner you deserve, and he expects you with impatience. You make vast dispatch, says I; I now begin to

H

no

da

W

m

CC

in

P

tle

W

fo

le

íc

al

di

fi

m

g

to

b

CC

m

have an idea of the manner in which you intend to difpel my melancholy, 'Tis indeed certain, that so gay a dife as that you propose to me, would at last produce this effect, were I capable of making a habit of it; but that is the difficult point, or rather what I look upon as absolutely impossible. You don't know, that when my mind is in it's most happy situation, nothing is more abhorrent to it, than that perpetual oblivion of one's felf; and that there's nothing I would more willingly be free from, than reflection and meditation. The remedy therefore which you offer me, would be almost as painful as the evils I fuffer. He answer'd, that I ought at least for my own fake, to make a trial of it; that I should not thereby enter into any engagement, but what might be broke at pleasure; and that whenever company was displeasing, I might return to my solitude. At last I consented to wait upon him, particularly after he had drawn the character of the persons to whom he was to introduce me. The person in question, says he, is a protefant gentleman, whom I am endeavouring to make a convert to our religion by his majesty's command. You'll be delighted with his wisdom and good fense. He

He leads a retir'd life as you do, having no other company but his wife and daughter. You have too good a taste, favs he with a mysterious smile, not to wish to see them again, when once you

have been in their company.

you Tis

that

duce

ng a

oint,

tely

hen

ion,

han

and wil-

and

ich

in-

r'd,

ce, not

out

nd

ıg,

ast

ar-

he

ne.

e-

11-

on

be

e.

Ie

ACCORDINGLY we went together, in my coach, to the gentleman, who did not live above two miles from me. The compliments they paid me at my coming in, gave me reason to believe I was expected; and I indeed found in the gentleman's countenance and conversation, whatever my conductor had promis'd; for he appear'd to be a person of excellent sense; witty, polite, a taste for the sciences, and inform'd with the most exalted notions of honour and virtue. discours'd for some time before the ladies appear'd. The jesuit, as though he were impatient to have me fee them, defir'd Mr. R \_\_\_\_\_ to procure me that fatisfaction; and immediately he indulg'd me that favour with the best grace imaginable. His lady came in, who look'd to be about forty years of age, and feem'd by her air and aspect to be a person of condition; but all my glances were in a moment directed to her daughter, whom I took rather for fome deity than a mortal

₿

mortal being. Nature never lavish'd her perfections with greater profusion. I at first barely admir'd her as the most lovely object I had ever feen. The delicacy of her complexion, the regularity of her features, the dazling vivacity of her eyes; a thousand charms diffus'd over her face and her whole person, form'd such a spectacle, as I could not for some time faciate my felf with gazing upon. Nor were her words, or the tone of her voice less graceful; and to complete such a number of perfections, the whole was accompanied with an air of sweetness and modesty; which seem'd to declare, that fo beautiful a body was inform'd by a foul of a fuperior nature. Though my admiration was rais'd as high as it possibly could be, I yet had so great a command over my felf, as not to fhew it very strongly. We spent the rest of the visit in mutual civilities; and were fo well pleas'd with one another, that we promis'd to cultivate each other's friendship.

The jesuit watch'd me more narrowly than I imagin'd he had done; and ask'd me, with a smile, as we return'd, how I lik'd the gentleman and his family. I answer'd, that I had all the reason imaginable to like them. And the lady? says

he;

h

1

C

P

re

ly

W

d

th

m

d

Pire

h

he

b

n

13

1

tr

M

U

d her

I at

vely

cy of

her

yes;

face

ch a

time

Nor

roice

ch a

sac-

and

that

by a

my

offi-

om-

very

visit

well

pro-

ip.

wly

ſk'd

wI

an-

agi-

ays

he;

he; is not she a sweet creature? Oh she's an angel, fays I; and I question whether she's to be match'd in the whole world. Upon this he affum'd a more ferious countenance. I knew, fays he, you'd pass this judgment; and will confess to you, that I had some design in introducing you. You are looking out for remedies against forrow; now will it be possible for you ever to find a more lovely one? Alas! fays I, looking upon him with furprize, you don't know me: I understand what remedy 'tis you intend to propose; but then you have not heard that love alone is the cause of my greatest misfortunes. He interrupted me, by declaring he was not a stranger to that particular; and that this was the very reason why he advis'd me in the manner he had done. I am unacquainted, fays he, with the detail of your adventures; but I form'd a judgment of you from the general idea which the princess gave me of your character. You are natually tender-hearted. Be affur'd that love is the only remedy, to heal the evils it may have occasion'd: believe this to be true, for I have long studied the heart of man. He added, you will now easily understand the system I have form'd, in VOL. IV. order

h

i

d

i

b

fo

lo

th

de

W

ve

un

it on

the

att

to

TI

its

₿

order to work a cure: this I shall reduce to four principal heads; first, religion, whose motives and sublime considerations will soon diminish the sense of your pains; secondly, the perusal of agreeable books, which will partly dispel the remembrance of them; thirdly, company, which will banish them entirely; and lastly, the sweets of love, which will steal into your heart like a healing balm, and inspire

you with a relish for pleasure.

Tho' nothing could be more whimfical, and undoubtedly more unnatural, than this medley of fenfual pleafures and religion; I yet did not despise his system, because it was a medley. But as I imagin'd I should be equally incapable of devoting my felf either to company or love, I therefore declar'd that I did not expect to reap any benefit by his counfels: however, he was not discourag'd for this. As he did not know any thing relating to my wife, and in all probability took me for a widower, who was at liberty to love whom I pleas'd; he perfifted in declaring that I should soon experience the efficaciousness of his method. I will suppose, that his views in introducing me to this young lady were entirely honest; and that he did it purely to give me

duce

rion,

tions

ins;

oks,

ance

will

the

pire

mfi.

iral,

and

em,

ma-

of

or

not

un-

ig'd

ing

lity

li-

per-

ex-

od.

uc-

ely

ive

me

me an opportunity of falling in love with her, and afterwards making her my wife. But tho' his project was not successful, it yet had this effect, viz. it brought me to this shameful confession, viz. that I did not know my own heart, when I imagin'd it was secure against the attacks of love.

WHEN we were got to my house, ho took his leave; and now my business of greatest importance, was, to peruse the books he had left with me. The first therefore that I open'd was the divine catechism, in which he had affur'd me all things belonging to religion were comprehended. As I had as yet but a very imperfect idea of the truths of the Christian religion, the reader will naturally suppose, that this book was not over satisfactory. Several things were obscure; and had they been clearer, yet my mind was of fuch a turn, that unless a doctrine is corroborated by proofs, it could not make the least impression The following reflection was the first I made, after having read it over attentively. On what grounds does this man pretend to make me fubmit blindly to his authority, or that of his book? There is undoubtedly no religion but has its principles; and the most senseless and inco❽

incoherent in the whole world, might very fafely offer its principles to me in this manner. Confequently there is none of 'em but has the same right, or rather that has as little, to require my affent to them without the least proof or examination. I concluded therefore, that I was to wait the jesuit's explications, before! could expect to reap the fruits, which he had affur'd me I should, from his catechism and other religious books. After this, I took up some of the works of gallantry and amusement, which he had rank'd in the fecond class of remedies. I dipt a little into them all, but did not find that above two or three at most were any ways rational. A few ingenious thoughts, a happy turn of expression, Some fost or smiling images; such were the weapons the jesuit offer'd me, to drive away the remembrance of my pains. However, after I had look'd into these pieces for about a quarter of an hour, I threw 'em from me with the utmost indignation. Heavens! fays I, does he sport with my forrows! To imagine that it is possible for me to be comforted by fuch triffing amusements as these, is the highest insult.

1

I now entertain'd a meaner idea than ever, of the promises with which the jefuit had fill'd me. As to his third method of cure, I look'd upon it as more improbable than the two former; and I refolv'd not to make use of his fourth remedy. Upon this I was firmly determin'd to rid my felf of this troublesome physician; and to make my excuses to her highness for rejecting a person she was pleased to send me. He was to return the next day; when I left the following message, which I order'd my servant to deliver in the most civil terms, viz. that I begg'd him not to give himself any farther trouble about me. However, I was vastly pleas'd that he had introduc'd me to so agreeable a family as that of Mr. R \_\_\_\_, whom I reflected on with the highest pleasure, and resolv'd to keep up a close correspondence with them. As Mr. R---'s temper and difposition suited very much with mine, I did not doubt but I might engage him to be a good friend. The charms of his daughter, were strongly painted in my imagination, and whenever she was prefent to my memory, my forrows were footh'd. I even perceiv'd that she occur'd too often to it, and for that reason I fome-

not were ious ion,

might

ne in

none

rather

ent to

rami-

I was

ore I

vhich

is ca-

After

s of

had

to ins.

, I in-

he hat by

the

W

fometimes endeavour'd to blot out the lovely idea. I then would fall again into my old way of thinking; but while I was recollecting all the unhappy circumstances of my life, some circumstance or other would naturally, as it were, awake the remembrance of miss R—. Whenever I exclaim'd against my wise's insidelity, the next moment I would compare her charms with those of the young lady abovemention'd. Such, would I say, was my ungrateful, my perjur'd wise; at least such she appear'd to my eyes when I thought her my only happiness.

I SPENT that evening, and part of the night, in this fort of inquietude. Nevertheless, heaven is my witness, that so far from having the least mistrust, of what was now taking root infenfibly in my heart; I did not once suspect that my passions would have betray'd, and brought me into danger. The reader has heard, in what manner I had curb'd them hitherto. Sorrow was properly the only passion I had to struggle with. Whatever love had inspir'd was pure and inno-I will own, that I was fearless and unguarded, because I had not the least Notion of danger. And indeed I funk under it at once without making the least oppoopposition; and an odd circumstance, is, that my reason was as soon impos'd upon as my senses. I undoubtedly would have suppress'd this part of my story, which indeed reslects shame upon me, had same and reputation been the motives of my writing. However, I promis'd to present the public with a faithful account of my calamities and weakness, and not to

make my own elogium.

out the

in into

e I was

tances

other

e the

Vhen-

ofide.

pare

lady

Was

; at

vhen

the

Ne-

t fo

of

in

my

ght

rd,

hi-

ly

11-

0-

br

ft

k

ft

UPON my waking, my imagination was employ'd on miss R—— to such a degree, that I cou'dn't think of any thing else. Cupid, for 'twas he himself, raised the most delightful emotions in my bosom; and whether it were an effect of the dreams, which had exhibited themselves to my fancy in sleep, or from the nature of the passion itself; I awak'd in such an extafy of joy, as I had never felt but in the most delicious moments of my life. I, however, made fome reflections on this change; and as I did not endeavour to impose upon myself, it was easy for me to judge the cause of it. I love, says I, that's certain. But then I added immediately, in order to prevent the reproaches of reason, Is it a crime to love? I have found on a thousand occasions, that love is an innocent passion. liev'd

en

m

ar

to

ir

fe

P

I

liev'd it to be not only lawful, but effential to my happiness, at a time when I made wisdom and virtue my study. How should it cease to be so, since it charms my grief, and fills my soul with joy? No; I have sound a remedy to my sorrows; 'tis love, and I feel the effects of it. The jesuit had a more just notion of things than I, and knew my heart, better than

I myself did.

This way of reasoning appear'd so folid and conclusive, that I thought it unanswerable. I even forgot for some time, that I was engaged by fuch ties, as absolutely forbid my forming any others; and even, when I recollected this, I look'd upon it as a weak and trifling objection; and destroy'd it so easily, that my heart feem'd prepar'd to answer it. Yes, says I, I am bound by the strong ties of marriage; but the present affair relates only to love. As my wife has violated her conjugal vows, I certainly am entirely disengag'd from her. Ungrateful woman! Did I not adore her? Should not I have lov'd her with my latest breath? Alas! I should still prefer her to the posfession of a throne, were it possible for her to recover her lost innocence; but my shame and her perfidy, are too flagrant. Can Can any one therefore condemn me, for

endeavouring to forget her?

ntia

nade

-Tow

No;

WS;

The

ing;

fa

unne,

fo-

3;

d

1;

irt

I,

1-

ly

y -

I

LET me confider, fays I; This difficulty I can clear up in an instant. I, however, cannot possibly dissolve the engagements by which I am bound to my wife, and I don't even intend to do it. This is a fatal chain which I must be forc'd to drag fo long as I live. But then, I ought to despise her; 'twas a shameful weakness in me, to doubt whether I still lov'd her. But 'tis certain that the heart must love fomething. 'Twas not to a needless purpose, that heaven suggested to me, that love would heal all my forrows; confequently I may indulge the passion which I have for miss R ---. 'Tis true indeed, that I cannot propose any thing farther in this, than the bare pleasure of foothing it. But what did I ever feek for in love? Was it the bare pleasure of the fenses? But this degrades the human creature to a brute. -- No: 'tis the sweet union of two hearts, between whose fensations and impulses the utmost harmony is found; 'tis a tafte for merit, 'tis the inexpressible charm of tenderness; 'tis all that I can no longer expect to find in my faithless partner; or can feek for in another, without also incurring the guilt of G 5 infidelity;

infidelity; for this kind of tye may be dissolved; the vows and oaths of marriage, are no ways relative to this delicate part of love. The moment a person who had promised eternal fidelity, violates his engagements, the other party is free. The body only is bound by verbal promisses. Now if this is the only tye, I'll never break it.

pr

to

an

wl

fic

m

th

vi

he

m

ut

m

th

ch

tie

to

W

nc w

th

I REVOLV'D a great many more reflections in my mind that morning; but what is strange, is, that they all tended to justify my new passion, and I did not form a fingle argument to combathic. This, like an impetuous flood, carried away all my ideas with its current. In the afternoon, word was brought that Mr. R—— was come to vifit me, upon which I ran to receive him with the utmost satisfaction. The servant had not told me, that he had brought his wife and daughter along with him; but 'tis impossible to express the exquisite pleasure I felt, when the idol of my heart appear'd. I paid them all the highest compliments, when beginning to discourse, we unbofom'd ourselves with much greater freedom than we had done before. Mr. Rdefir'd to enjoy my friendship with as much warmth as I requested his. This I promis'd be

ar-

ate

ho

his

ee.

10-

[1]

re.

ut

ed

ot

it.

ed

at

on

It-

ot

n-

e I

S,

oe-

as

I

d

promis'd at once; and in order to cement it the more, I engag'd my fifter and niece to cultivate the acquaintance of his lady The discourse turn'd for and daughter. a confiderable time, on the great zeal which the jesuit discover'd for the converfion of hereticks. Mr. R—— who by this time entertain'd so favourable an idea of me, as to be perfuaded he might trust me with a fecret, without incurring the leaft danger; confess'd naturally to me, that he was almost tired with the jesuit's visits and instructions. I can't think, says he, in what manner this scene will end. Prudence obliges me to permit his vifits, because I have an express order from his majesty for that purpose. 'Tis with the utmost regret that I listen to his arguments, for I am too firmly persuaded of the truth of my own religion, ever to change it; but then he's fo very troublefome, that I cannot fay whether my patience will let me bear with him much longer. On the other fide, I'm oblig'd to act a very cautious part. The employments I enjoy, and even my estate will be taken from me, in case he does not make a favourable report to the king, who feems to be more exasperated against the protestants than ever. We daily hear G 6 of

n

n

n

ľ

156

of nothing but persecution. The chamber of the edict, in Roan, has just now been suppress'd; and the court threatens to abolish all our privileges; and to increase our calamities, we are affur'd that Mr. de Turenne designs to turn papist. We are not to doubt but the king's zeal will be still more enslam'd, after so great a conquest as this is made; and will use us with less indulgence than ever. I am therefore in the utmost perplexity; and I fcarce know how to reconcile my confcience and worldly interest. I answer'd, that I was forry to hear his affairs were in so dangerous condition; and to shew that his fears were not altogether vain, I told him all that had happen'd to me and my family in Angers. If, fays I, foreigners are treated in this manner, what may not the natives expect? I should have left France immediately after this treatment, had not I been detain'd in it by her highness's goodness, and his majesty's affurances, even from his own mouth, of support and protection. But with regard to you, fir, what hinders you to fereen your felf from persecution, by withdrawing into some of the neighbouring countries? Do not England and Holland offer you an afylum? - This, fays he, is not so easy a matter

mber

been

s to

cafe

Mr.

We

will

ta

ufe

am

and

on-

in

at

old

ny

ers

eft

t, h-

1-

of

o

g

matter as you imagine, for the parts are not open. Besides, can I leave the kingdom without a farthing in my pocket, and expose my family to the utmost extremes of misery? I am so well known, that I shall not be allow'd to sell my estate; and several of those who call themselves friends, and my servants, are spies over me. We now began to conside in one another without the least reserve; which, however, did not hinder me from observing all his daughter's motions, and to undo myself by gazing on her lovely face.

'Tis well known, that a little familiarity makes a great change, both in carriage and the turn of a conversation; and this we experienc'd almost in an instant. The four ladies, observing that Mr. R-and I now discours'd together with much greater freedom, they imitated us, and began to converse with the utmost fami-'Twas then that I began again to admire the charms of the amiable Cecilia, for by this name she was call'd by her mother. Tho' she still continued very modest and reserv'd, I yet could plainly perceive, that she was naturally of a gay temper; and by an effect peculiar to love only, nothing now delighted me for much as that disposition of mind, tho' I had

me

the

pu

to

aft

ho

fee

an

fro

fic

W

ab

pl

10

h

di

0

n

had till then relish'd nothing so much as a grave and severe behaviour. A smile, or a gay expression from miss Cecilia, would excite the sweetest sensations of joy in my heart. At the bare sight of her, my blood seem'd to flow with greater liberty; I, methoughts, breath'd easier, and fancied that I felt a certain sprightliness in every limb, which I had not even

been sensible to in my youth.

However, I did not defire to express what I thought of her, any otherwise than by general civilities; and don't know whether she had experience enough to guess at the meaning of my glances and my admiration. With regard to myself, I was not fufficiently vers'd in gallantry, to attempt infinuating myfelf into her affections in a methodical way. I was pleas'd to find that I lov'd her; and this, perhaps, was the only fruit I expected to reap from my passion. I undoubtedly should have indulg'd myself in the pleafure of feeing, and discoursing with her; but then I cannot certainly fay, that I should ever have taken the liberty to once mention the word love, in her prefence. What I now fay is fo true, that notwithstanding the kind of approbation which I had already given to my fentiments,

as ile,

ia,

oy er,

li-

r,

t-

fs

n

-

5

S

ments, I yet could not forbear examining them afresh after she was gone. I computed, as it were, how far I was refoly'd to indulge my heart. I'll spend, says I, the afternoon of every other day at Mr. R-'s house; there I shall have the pleasure to fee the charming Cecilia; to fit by her, and hear her talk. I'll gather so much from her fight and discourse, as shall suffice to amuse me agreeably the days that I am absent from her. Thus innocent were my views hitherto. In a word, I abandon'd myself thus freely to love, purely to nourish it in my bosom, and in order that it might remove my forrows. However, as the little god had infinuated himself slily into my heart; and that I did not begin to argue in his favour, 'till he had obtain'd a superiority over it; I ought to have discover'd by the change which was wrought in me, that I was now over-reach'd by him; and therefore that he'd continue to impose upon me. Be this as it will, I know not what he might have made me do, had I liftned only to his fuggestions, or my own impulses; and I have this comfort in the shame which afterwards follow'd, that had I not liftned to the advice of another perfon, I should not havebrought it upon me.

₿

THE jesuit return'd in the evening, with a defign to fpend the evening with me. I was now fo delighted with the past events of the day, and was so greatly chang'd in my humour, that I had countermanded the order I gave the night before; he thereupon was admitted, and I was highly pleased at his coming in. You now, says I, behold a man who is quite chang'd from what he was yesterday. This fill'd him with fo much joy, that he interrupted me immediately, by faying; I fee it plainly by your countenance, and I thank heaven I flatter myself that my books and advice have contributed to this happy alteration. Your books? fays I, very naturally; -- no, no; and I'll affure you they gave me so little fatisfaction, that I threw them aside. But, in case you call the inclination I have for mifs Cecilia, the effect of your counsel, I then must confess myself greatly obliged to you; and that I have already reap'd the greatest benefit from it. I then expatiated on the beautiful qualities of that young lady, with the pleasure which a person feels, who talks of a beloved object; and looking on the jesuit as a kind of confidant, I let him into the whole state of my heart. After having heard me with an air of fatisfaction; I'm

an

no pa

m

b

al

u

y

ti

ti

T

6

F

with

c. I

ents

din

nd-

he gh-

ays

om

im

me

aly

en

ks

ry

re

n,

U

a,

ft

d

-

e

h

5

C

Ò

;

I'm now firmly perfuaded, fays he, that a cure will be wrought upon you; that he had never doubted of the fuccess of the method which he had proposed to me that he could have wish'd I had complied with his whole prescription; for then, says he, the fruits of it must have been more perfect; that the service I should have reap'd from religion in this particular, would have exceeded infinitely my hopes and my imagination. - I interrupted him in my turn, and told him, that I ought not to be accus'd, for not approving that part of the remedy which he had offer'd me under the name of religion; for, fays I, the arguments which I met with in the books you lent me, are very far from being fatisfactory. He then made me fuch an answer, as I looked upon then, and still continue to do, as a very odd one: I understand, says he, what it is displeases you in the little piece I lent you. You are mighty fond of reasoning, and are not satished with any thing less than demonstration. But I am to tell you, that 'tis hardly possible to arrive at any thing certain in religious matters; and persons of the greatest sense are not always the best Christians: Faith requires simplicity] and submission. Harkee, fays he, I'll now tell you a reflection

₿

tion which I have made a thousand times over. A man of sense is so far from being diffatisfied, that we only require him to be of a tractable turn of mind, and put reason quite out of the question; that he ought to look upon our method as an infinitely advantageous one. In case religion was not to be attain'd but by dint of reasoning, 'tis of so important a nature, that we should be oblig'd to study it all our life-time; and how great must be the toil, to be for ever poring over the bible, and feveral other obscure pieces, in order to discover the true sense of them? Now every thing necessary to salvation, is comprehended in the little book I gave you. A quarter of an hour's reading does the bufiness. By it's affistance, you'll enjoy the feveral privileges of religion; you'll polfess all its exalted hopes, its motives and consolations; and then, you may devote your whole time to the most delightful employments, and may lawfully tafte all the fatisfactions of life. Now what think you of my reflection? — I contented myself with observing, that the examination of it would employ too much time; but that my mind was of fuch a cast, that 'twas not not in my power to believe or difbelieve; and that it was necessary for my reason

fa pr H

re

an I af

th to of

in by Y

ch fel lu

in

lov ver fir rea

un I i

he thi mes ing

to

put

he

in-

eli-

of

re,

all

the

le,

er

W

n-

A

u-

he

of-

d

te

1-

ne

u

lf

it

ıt

LS

reason to be convinc'd by proofs. Well, fays he, we are not wanting in these; and I promife to give you very fatisfactory ones. However, there is no haste for this. The chief of all was, to heal your forrows; and I am overjoy'd, that one of the methods I propos'd happens to be falutary. afterwards ask'd me, whether I would not permit him to inform her highness of his fuccess? To this I answer'd plainly, that this feem'd to shew, that his endeavours to cure me, were not fo much the effect of zeal as of vanity; and that his only aim in it, was, to ingratiate himself the better by that means into her highness's favour. You may, fays I, if you judge proper, inform the princess that I'm much easier in my mind, and that I owe this happy change to your good offices; all which I my felf will confirm. But then I'm absolutely resolved not to let her know, that love has any thing to do in the affair. The very good father promised to do as I defir'd; and as I did not tell him any other reason to engage his silence, than the uncertainty I was in, whether the change I then found would continue; he promised me in a very agreeable manner, that he would not once open his lips about any thing I defired him to conceal; and would conclude

ar

W

to

f

0

t

conclude matters wholly to my fatisfac-

However, he did not give himself much trouble about my affairs; and the thing which he promis'd as the crown of the whole work, prov'd fatal both to the amiable Cecilia and myself. His satisfaction was fo great, to find that the beginning answer'd his hopes so well; that he had not patience to spend the night with me as he first intended. He hereupon took his leave, with an intention to pass two or three hours at Mr. R--'s; and without telling me the reason of his leaving me fo abruptly, he only affured me, that he would continue to ferve me with greater assiduity than I could imagine. I desir'd him to give me a little more light into his design; but 'twas to no purpose.

Be affur'd, says he as he went away, I'll be very discreet, and do all that lies in my power to serve you. Observing him to leave me in such a hurry, I recollected what I had heard her highness say, viz. that such people as he are a kind of comedians. He went, indeed, to Mr. R—'s. His intention, as I afterwards found, was to act the part of a Mercury upon this occasion, and to incline Cecilia to sayour me. He managed matters with wonderful skill, and

sfac.

nself

the

n of

the

atis-

be-

that

ght

ere.

os i

31

his

red

mė

ne.

ght fe.

11

ay

to

ed

Z.

e-

15

and was much abler to carry on an intrigue. than to argue with folidity on religious topicks. 'Tis well known that a girl of fixteen is often feduced with no great difficulty, when she is told of the sweets which are to be tasted in love; especially, if 'tis a person she venerates, and whose counsels do half the work; for nature foon per-I myfelf was furpriz'd to forms the reft. find Cecilia in fuch a frame of mind, without my being put to any pains upon that I did not fail to wait upon her the next day after dinner; and met her in a lane by her father's house, where she was walking with the jesuit. Twas true, indeed, that any one might fee 'em from the windows; but yet I cou'dn't but wonder that this man had gain'd fo much power over Mr. R—— and his lady; for I did not doubt but they were highly distatisfied to fee her in his hands; and that fear alone forc'd them to this political complais fance.

The moment I saw miss Cecilia, I step'd out of my coach and went up to her. As I had not apprehended the meaning of the words which the jesuit spoke last to me; I was far from guessing the subject of their discourse; nevertheless, the blush which arose in the cheeks of that beautiful person

A

h

to

C)

2

C

W

I

n

11

I

e

d

jı

ſ

f

ľ

fon as I approach'd her, and the fearful air with which she fix'd her eyes downwards, made me judge that she was difcourfing of some matters of great importance. I was going to make an apology for my intrusion, when the jesuit prevented me, by faying, fir, I was talking of you to mis Cecilia: I thought I should do her a piece of service, in acquainting her with your merit, and the inclination you have for her; and am pleas'd to find that she's of a grateful disposition. Altho' this compliment put me to fome confusion, I yet answer'd immediately, that I really had the greatest veneration for the young lady; and shou'd think myself vastly happy, cou'd I be allow'd to prove the fincerity of it by my fervices. I have gone farther than you, fays the jefuit; I have betray'd your fecret; and have promis'd the lady fomething more from you than esteem. So blunt a declaration as this, heightned miss Cecilia's blushes, and perplex'd me very much: however, I made a tender, and at the same time, a most refpectful answer. - I really had a strong passion for her, the breathing of which gave me exquisite pleasure; and as this present opportunity was altogether unforeseen, the expressions I then us'd, flow'd

rful

wn-

dif-

-10C

ogy

en-

of

ing

ion

nd Al-

me

he

ft-

he

10

d.

n

54

e

flow'd altogether from my heart. Mr. R—'s coming up, who, the moment he faw my coach, came out of the house to meet me, prevented his daughter from explaining herself. The instant her father appear'd she suppress her blushes, and we all walk'd together into the house.

HAD I been indulg'd the freedom of conversing with miss Cecilia in private whenever I pleas'd, I am not fure whether I should have addrest her that afternoon, my spirits were in such consusion; and indeed, I could scarce attend to Mr. R-'s discourse, in such a manner as was necessary for my making proper anfwers. The jefuit wou'd look upon me every now and then with a fmile, as tho? he applauded himself for the service he had done me, with regard to miss Cecilia. judg'd by her filence and timidity, that she was in no less confusion than myself. She feem'd to be very thoughtful; and I obferv'd that she often put her hand to her forehead, as tho' she endeavour'd to hide her eyes; but then I could fee her look at me thro' her fingers. She would fix her eyes languishingly on me; and when her glances met mine, she then would shut her fingers, and thereby bereave me of the fight of her inchanting face. My passion increas'd.

yet

and

cer

my

for

VO

OW

WI

be

an

mi

int

mo

dic

no

ful

tri

lo

ha

ble

WE

tis

m

The more simple and natural all my impulses were, the easier I understood this tender language which nature itself dictated, and consequently the greater impres-

fion it made upon me.

However, though I had enjoy'd the utmost pleasure that afternoon in mile Cecilia's company, I yet cou'd not but think that the jesuit had taken a very odd kind of step. I therefore desir'd him, as he was going out, to come and spend the evening with me; and enquir'd what views he had in acting after this manner. He answer'd, that his only view was to make me easy and happy; and added, that being persuaded I was a man of sense and honour, he therefore was under no apprehensions that I should make an ill use of the victory he obtain'd for me; be affur'd, fays he, that miss Cecilia loves you. I drew you in fo amiable a light, and protested that you are so passionately in love with her, that I observ'd her little heart take fire as the liftned. I really believe, fays he, fqueezing my hand at the fame time, that her heart's a little treasure. I only answer'd him, with an air of indifference, that I was very much oblig'd to him for the pains he had taken. Tho'l was enflam'd with the strongest passion, yet

m-

12-

ef-

he

rife

out

dd

as

Ws He

ke

nd

p-

use as-

7CS

ht,

ely

tle

e-

he

re.

if-

to

m,

ret

yet this had not made me forget my duty; and tho' I did not dare to reveal to him, what reasons I had to keep myself within certain bounds; I yet nevertheless thought myself oblig'd to hint, that there were some which I wou'd not absolutely go beyond. Possibly I was the sport of my own heart, and did not explain myself with resolution enough. However this be, the jesuit continued asofficious as ever; and did all that lay in his power to make miss Cecilia love me.

I PAST fome months, thus agreeably intoxicated by love; and was fo much the more fatisfied with my own conduct, as I did not find, after a mature examination, that it interfer'd in any manner with honour. This very reflection, whether the subject of it were real or imaginary, contributed almost as much to my ease, as love itself; seldom a day past, in which I had not the satisfaction of seeing the amiable Cecilia. Whatever is passionate in assiduities, tender in behaviour, delicate in a thousand little preferences; all these were incessantly employ'd, as well to fatisty the impulses of my heart, as to inunuate myself into her affections. But what was very strange, and even surprizing to myself; not a single word escap'd VL. IV.

-to

tha

mi

wa I y

ut

2 (

du

ed

tic

an

ch

th

pc

fh

fo

us

ga

CT

W

th

lic

fu

me all that time, which discover'd the least intelligence between my tongue and my thoughts; for I explain'd my passion no otherwise, than by the dumb language of the eyes, and the extraordinary respect I paid her. This, undoubtedly, was an effect of those unalterable principles of virtue, which had taken fuch deep root in my foul, in my infant years; that these feem'd to act from nature, and did not want the affiftance of reflection. The continuing in this referve did not put me to the least struggle. I was, perhaps, at that time, the only instance of a man who lov'd with the greatest excess of passion, and yet did not entertain the least hopes or desires. I don't doubt, but mis Cecilia was furpriz'd, to find me observe so awful a filence, after the jefuit had introduc'd me in so advantageous a manner. She faw very plainly that I ador'd her; and I discover'd as evidently, that I had made a deep impression in her heart: so that my whole proceedings must necessarily have been a riddle to her. I would fometimes fee her, involv'd in thought, fix her eyes wishfully upon me; as the fhe endeavoured to discover what it was that thus stopt my tongue; and prevented me from expatiating on a pleasure, which so delighted my heart.

the

and

ion

age

ect

an

of

300

efe

100

n-

to

nat

ho

n,

ie-

fo

0-

r.

E;

ad

(o

ald

X

e

ı

18

o

.

I CONTINUED also to pay my court to her highness, who soon observed, that a happy change was wrought in my But tho' I confess'd that my mind was infinitely more easy than it us'd to be; I yet conceal'd the cause of it, with the utmost care. I was very willing to let the jesuit enjoy the reputation, of working a complete cure on me. Her highness, the dutchess of Orleans, was not so much mistress of her passion, but one easily discovered, that the herfelf stood in need of confolation. She grew thinner every day; and 'twas observ'd, that for some time her charms faded furprizingly, and the was no longer the gay woman she us'd to be. People us'd to whisper one another in the ear, and cry, that jealoufy had occasion'd this 'Tis certain that she imagin'd change. the king lov'd her; and his majesty had possibly endeavour'd to persuade her that the was dear to him. He had visited her for some time with great affiduity; they us'd to discourse in private; and calumny gave a malicious interpretation to their fe-Perhaps the princess cret interviews. would not have valued the reports, had the effects been really what the publick thought 'em to be; but the truth was fuddenly discover'd, by a circumstance H 2 which

tick

ver

ceal

heat

at a

offi

ger

ord

pri

Orl

his

alw

and

ma

OVO

he

we

the

pe

an

fir

of

th

T

th

tr

m

fe

u

which gave her highness the greatest mortification. The king had only made use of her as a screen, to conceal the passion he entertain'd for one of her maids of honour, whose name was la Valiere. His majesty had long cherish'd this slame in his bosom; but at last, whether it were owing to the weakness of the lover, or the vanity and ambition of the mistress, the whole fecret came out; and the world was furpriz'd, to fee a young woman of no birth, rais'd, in a moment, almost to the throne. An incident of fo extraordinary a nature, and in which her highness had, unknowingly, been made to act fo odd a part; had enflam'd her refentments to fuch a degree, that it occasion'd a great change in her humour and impair'd her health. thers, however, affur'd, that 'twas the duke, her confort's ill usage, that plung'd her into this deep melancholy. That prince, from a most unaccountable turn of mind, kept several mistresses publickly, and at the same time was jealous of her highness. He was daily reproaching her; and often treated her with greater fcorn and contempt, than he wou'd have shewn to one of his pages. These broils were feldom spoke of in publick; for the princess was so vaftly kind and humane to all her domefticks,

nor-

use Tion

ho-

mahis

ing

nity

ole ur-

th,

ne.

re,

W-

t;

le-

in

)-

e, er

e,

l,

e

e

n

e

ticks, that not one of 'em wou'd discover any thing she might wish to have conceal'd; but 'twas impossible but I must hear of 'em, as I was almost every day at St. Cloud; and was confider'd as an officer of the house, rather than as a stran-I remember an affair of an extraordinary nature, which gave that unhappy princess the utmost pain. The duke of Orleans would often walk from one of his mistresses houses to another; and was always dreft on these occasions very plain; and fometimes had not fo much as a footman after him. One day as he was going over the Pont-neuf, or New-bridge in Paris, he was stopt by four or five tradesmen who were half drunk, and were come thither upon a very whimfical account. they were over a bottle, the discourse happen'd to turn upon outward behaviour and physiognomy; when one of 'em affirm'd that he would guess the profession of the first person he should meet in the street, by his gait and countenance. This appear'd fo fingular to the rest, that they resolv'd to put his skill to the trial; and in order to heighten their mirth, they agreed to lay a wager of a few pistoles. However, instead of fixing upon the next street for the experiment, H 3

in t

but, who

long

fur

at

clu

Ev

ho

dig

ex

du

W

to

hi

ME

0

fe

t

I

they made choice of the Pont-neuf. Un. fortunately for her highness, they happen'd to come just as the duke was passing by. Being pretty much heated by wine, they did not use much ceremony, but stopp'd his highness at once, not know. ing who he was. The person who was to give his judgment, after viewing him for some time; and undoubtedly finding by his air and the delicacy of his features, that he was far from being a mechanic; eried out, that he was not of any trade, but was certainly a cuckold. His companions were highly delighted with the fentence he had pass'd; and as the person whom they shou'd stop, was to decide the wager; they urged him, with all the waggery of people who are in liquor, to tell them at once whether he were not a cuckoid. The duke would not answer their question, so that he found it a very difficult matter to get out of their hands; however, he, at last, did, when he could not forbear reflecting on this odd adventure. He cou'd not perfuade himfelf that it was owing merely to chance; but fancying that he was known; and that this was a kind of hint which was given him with regard to her highness's intrigues, he went immediately for St. Cloud. I was in

Un.

hap-

fling

wine,

but

10W-

Was

him

ling

res,

ic;

but

ons

nce

OIII

va-

a cr

in the palace when he came; and was but just come from the princes's closet, who had done me the honour to hold a long discourse with me that day. The fury that darted from the duke's eyes, at his coming in, made every body conclude that he was in a dreadful passion. Every body withdrew out of respect; however, they cou'd not but hear his indignation break out, and the injurious expressions with which he treated the dutchefs. The duke florm'd at his lady for above an hour, which threw all her women into tears. All the fervants were told by the footman who had walk'd after his highness, the whole affair of the Pontneuf; but they all promis'd not to once open their lips about it. I shall pass over several circumstances of a comic nature, as not fuiting with the fad story of my life.

WHATEVER might be the cause of the forrow, which prey'd in this secret manner on her highness's spirits, she yet was as kind and affable as usual. This only increas'd her fondness for the solitude of St. Cloud, and made her more indifferent with regard to the pleasures of a court. She now never went to Versailles, but when she was absolutely oblig'd to

H 4

it;

urge

extr

told

his

foul

con

lett

OCC

he,

Re

aff

tl

it; and left it as foon as the possibly She feem'd to grow kinder every day to all her domesticks, and to all who had the honour of waiting upon The great concern I had for her highness's health and felicity, prompted me a thousand times to take notice, that I was very forry to find her fo melancholy as she always appear'd. But whenever I prefum'd to hint any thing of this kind, she would answer me only by fighs, which spoke a dejected heart: and on these occasions, awe kept me from explaining myself farther. But tho' it was not in my power, to confole her as well as I would fain have done; I yet did all I possibly cou'd. I used to stay fo long with her highness, as I thought I was not troublesome. I for this purpose used to go twice daily to her palace; and would willingly have fpent whole days there, had not my strong inclination for miss Cecilia, call'd me often to her father's.

Being one day at St. Cloud, one of Mr. R—'s fervants brought me a letter from his master, by which I was conjur'd, by all the tyes of friendship, to go immediately to his house. Altonish'd to find him write to me in such urgent

Tibly

very

all.

pon

her

oted

that

an-

enthis

hs,

on

X-

723

as

I

*fe* 

d

S

r

urgent terms, I suppos'd that something extraordinary had happen'd; and therefore told the bearer, that I would wait upon his mafter immediately. I went, when I found him in his closet, with an air of consternation in his face; and holding a letter in his hand, which feem'd to have occasion'd his disorder. Alas! fir, fays he, the moment I came in, I am undone. Read only what is writ to me, and then fee whether it will be in your power to affift me on this melancholy occasion. read it, and found that it had been fent from a protestant gentleman, his friend; who gave him an account that the perfecution began to rage in the province where he liv'd. He complain'd particularly, in the most moving terms, that his fon and two daughters had been forc'd away; but whither they were carried he knew not. He added, that the cruelties which were exercis'd in the provinces, would foon extend to the court and Paris; and that he was affur'd from very good hands, that the moment Mr. de Turenne should have abjur'd the protestant religion; all those who should refuse to follow his example, would be forc'd to it; that the gentleman abovemention'd was to makehis abjuration in a few weeks afterwards; Hr that

wit

at wo

cal

wi

kn

ef

ev

**e**2

n

0

that he believ'd all those who were refolv'd not to be converts to popery, had no other refuge lest, but to fly their country immediately; he therefore advised him to fell privately, as he himself was doing, as much of his estate as he possibly could; and above all, that he exhorted him to place his daughter instantly in some place where she might be safe, or that otherwise she'd be forc'd away from him.

AFTER I had read this, Mr. Rtold me that this was not all. Here, fays he, is a letter which I receiv'd from Mr. de Turenne by the same post. As I have the honour to have a place in his esteem, I begg'd him, ingenuously, to give me his advice; firmly perfuaded that he has too great a foul, to betray me on this occasion. Pray read the answer he sent me. I found that Mr. de Turenne had declared to him, in a very frank and friendly manner, the principal motives of his conversion. He advis'd him to imitate the pattern he had fet him, rather for the fake of his foul, than that of his worldly possessions. However, that in case he was firmly determined not to change his religion, he advis'd him to fly immediately to England or Holland, with whatever money he could carry off with

re re-

had

coun-

vised

f was

ooffi-

ex-

ant-

safe.

way

lays

Mr.

ve

m,

his

00

in.

d

n,

ie

e

d

with him; because, he faid, the time was at hand, when great numbers of people would wish they had used the same precautions. This, fays Mr. R -- fills me with inexpressible perplexity. I don't know a foul in any foreign country, from whom I may beg an afylum; I can't think in what manner to dispose of my estate privately; and then I am afraid every moment of having my daughter The danger is forc'd away from me. extreme, and I cannot think of any remedy, that will be speedy enough for my purpose; unless, says he, your friendship should suggest something which may be of fervice to me.

AFTER having meditated a moment on what I had read and heard; I am forry, says I, 'tis not in my power to direct you to some person in England; for I suppose that is the chief service you want me to do you. Altho' I am an Englishman, I yet have not one acquaintance in my own country. However, tho' I can't serve you myself, I possibly may get a friend to do it. We are not to expect to obtain any thing in your favour at St. Cloud; for courtiers are always of that religion which the monarch professes. But I have a friend who

H 6

8

is able to do you very great fervice, and I believe he really will for my fake. The person I mean is the lord Clarendon. Tho' this nobleman has loft the king's fayour, his relations and friends wou'd ferve him to the utmost. Besides, as he is at Roan, as he himself inform'd me by letter; it will be an easy matter for him to procure you a vessel, in which you may fail for England. I'll write to his lordship on this occasion by the first post. Mr. R—— answer'd, that he'd accept of my offer; but then, fays he, before you've writ to his lordship and receiv'd an answer, my daughter may very possibly be forc'd away from me. Well, fays I; in case you are under any apprehenfions upon her account, you may fend her before to Roan. The lord Clarendon will receive her with pleasure; and she may pass her time very agreeably with his lady, 'till fuch time as you may have fettled your affairs, and be ready to fet out for that city.

MR. R—— was mightily pleafed with this overture. He weigh'd the feveral circumstances of it asresh, and drew the following plan, in order for the putting it in execution. As I am so narrowly watch'd, says he, it will be impossible for

my

my

wil

sha

flea

giv

ren

he,

yo Yo

W

ar

be

of

th

a

7

and

The

don.

s fa-

erve

is at

let-

him

vou

his

ost.

ept ore

v'd Mi-

ıll,

p-

ay

a-

nd ly

y

to

h

e 37

my daughter to go for Roan, but notice will be taken of it; and consequently I shall be accus'd of sending her away by flealth. It therefore wou'd be proper to give fuch a colour to her flight, as may remove all fuspicions. You yourself, says he, might carry her off in the night in your own coach, and convey her to Roan. You may ride a great number of miles in the night, by which means no one would absolutely know which way you are gone. I'll pretend the next day, to be vastly surpriz'd at her slight; and will even feem perfuaded, that she is gone off with fome lover. In case the spies who are fet over me, should mistrust any thing, they, at least, won't have any proofs against me; and much less will they know whither you design to send her. There is, fays he, but one difficulty in this project, which is, that you may possibly do your felf a prejudice, in thus endeavouring to ferve me .- I affur'd him, that this would not be of the least weight with me; I don't, fays I, defign to fpend my days in France. There are even some affairs which require my presence in England, and I don't intend to stay long after you. The most unhappy circumstance that could possibly happen to me, in case

it should be discover'd that I assisted in conveying away part of your family, would be, my being forc'd to leave this kingdom a little sooner than I intended to do.

ni

fo

h

te

li

fi

0

WHAT I now spoke was sincere; and I was fo defirous of putting an end to Mr. R--'s perplexity, that I did not fo much as confider that I was preparing torments for myfelf, in thus contributing to miss Cecilia's flight. However, this thought occur'd to me afterwards; but then it was not near fo afflicting, when I confider'd that I myfelf should pass, before 'twas very long, into England. The lord Terwill was return'd thither; and therefore I had determin'd, for some time, to cross over into my native country, in order to fettle the estate which was devolved on my children. I confider'd, at the very time as I was speaking to Mr. R -- , that I might take this opportunity to leave France entirely; and consequently, that I should have a better opportunity of feeing and enjoying the company of my amiable Cecilia, when we should be arriv'd in England. I therefore promis'd faithfully, to come in my coach, with two or three fervants whom I might confide in, about fuch an hour of the night,

d in

nily,

this

ided

and

to

not

ing

ing

this

but

n I

ore

ord

re-

to

r-

ed

ė-

-,

to

y,

ty

of

4

**)**-

1,

t

Ċ

night, as I believ'd it would be possible for us to go off unseen by any person.

I LEFT him, in order that he might have time fufficient, to talk of these matters with his lady and daughter, likewise to prepare every thing on my fide. Neither Mrs. Lallin or my fifter were let into the fecret. I us'd to go frequently either to St. Cloud or to Paris, without giving them the least notice of it, and would fometimes lie out of the house. The only persons I acquainted with my design, were Dring, whom I had made my steward; my coachman and two footmen. I order'd Dring to fet out privately on horseback before night, upon some pretence or other; and come in the dead of night to Mr. R--'s house. As for myself, as soon as it was dusk, I fet out towards Paris; and only went so far up that road, as was necessary to lead the inhabitants of some neighbouring cottages into a mistake; and after I thought we were in no danger from the spies, I bid my coachman stop in some lone place till the time was almost expired, that I had promis'd to be at Mr. R shoule.

My hand is seiz'd with a trembling, now I am going to relate one of the most fatal adventures that ever befel me. I don't

DIC

inf

no

sho

the

R.

ge

TO

don't fay fatal with regard to the circumstances which attended upon it, as there was no blood shed; and that the sad accident which follow'd after it, can be referr'd only to the common course of nature, or to certain causes which it is not in the power of man to foresee; but as it prov'd of fuch dreadful consequence to my honour and my virtue. Nothing but a miracle from heaven, would have fav'd me from the brink of the precipice. 'Twould be to no purpose for me to impute the honour of it to my reason: an intelligent reader will find that I deserv'd to be undone; and that had it not been for a supernatural affistance, the weakness which had led me into this danger, wou'd not have been chang'd into strength, to prevent my ruin from being completed.

The time of my going to Mr. R—'s being near expir'd, I went towards it, and coming to the alley which stood before it, I found Dring waiting for me. We had been there but a very little time, when we perceiv'd, by the light of a little lanthorn, some persons coming very softly out of the house, who came up to us in an instant. These were Mr. R——, his lady and daughter. After a thousand kisses and embraces, they gave her up into my hands, when I promis'd

cum-

there

acci-

e re-

naot in

e to

but

av'd

ice.

im-

an v'd

een

ness u'd

to

nd , I

en

r-

ne e,

*se* 

r.

s,

promis'd they should hear from me, the instant of our arrival in Roan, which would not be above two days, because I intended to make all imaginable haste thither. As we were afraid left some of the servants should perceive us, we took but a very short farewell. I only repeated to Mr. R— the lord Clarendon's goodness and generosity; and with regard to the dangers, which might be met with in the road; I protested that I would venture my own life to spare that of his amiable daughter; and therefore that both him and his lady had reason to be very easy.

AFTER I had faid these words we set out. I had taken a fmall wax taper lighted into the coach. Miss Cecilia was silent, and feem'd lost in thought. I at first reproach'd her for it; but notwithstanding the tender fentiments which then inform'd my heart, I for some time discours'd only on common and indifferent subjects. She would every now and then speak a word or two by way of answer. I would not feem to gaze upon her with more than ordinary attention, which however, did not prevent me from fometimes contemplating the fweetness of her fine eyes; on which occasion, whenever my glances met hers, my heart would feel a more than ordinary emotion.

m 1

me

In

hea

liv

wh

the

for

ce

m

m

W

fa

ft

te

de

go

fi

b

t

n

B

emotion. Immediately I would cast my eyes down, and endeavour to recover my felf; however, I was too near her, to repel long the fubrile poison which she darted at once, from every part of her, into my heart. The bare found of her voice melted me in fuch a manner as is inexpressible. But what emotions must I feel whenever I touch'd her, which the continual jolting of the coach made me do every moment; to breathe the fame air, in the small tenement which held us; alas! to fee and feel but her only! 'twas not blood which now circulated in my veins, but the fires of love. The hurry which these occasion'd in my fpirits, enabled me to carry on our conversation a titele longer; but afterwards confuming themselves, if I may be allowed the figure, by their own heat; they chang'd infentibly into a heavy, melancholy languor, a moment after which I was deeply involved in thought. I began to confidely in a quite different manner from what I had hitherto done; that I was conveying a person, whose presence and conversation gave me fo much pleasure, to Roan, where I was to leave her, and thould perhaps never let eyes on her more. I shall then, says I to myself, lose the dear creature, whole prefence lulis all my forrows to reft, and whose

my

my

epel

my

ted

ble.

ver

ting

nt;

te-

and

ich

res

n'd

TUC

rds

rd

rd

m-

野の社

智がで

er

79

d

whose company is sweeter than any thing m life! All my forrows will again invade me, for 'tis fhe only that suppresses 'em. In case I am permitted to love her, is it natural that I should confent to bereave myself of so lovely an object? Good heavens, how will it be possible for me to five without her; what will my life be when she is gone from me? As I made these reflections, which employ'd my whole foul, a figh would every now and then feal from me. Tho' I myfelf did not perceive this, it did not escape the notice of mis Cecilia, whose heart was as tender as mine. She could not doubt, but herfelf was the cause of the disorder which she faw me in; and twas not till after fome fruggles, that the prevailed with herfelf to tell me, the was forry to fee me to fad and dejected. However, at last inclination got the better, when the broke into the following words: What can it be, fir, that has made you thus melancholy on a fudden; I am not fure so unhappy ast o be the cause of it? This question, and the tone of voice with which the spoke, made me turn my head towards her. My eyes met hers; when the fost inquietude which methoughts I read in them, quite over-power'd me. I thereupon took up one

mu

the

to f

emo

and

ted

No

vai

tho

em pli

utr

WI

for

di

Wa

to

in fe

he

m

one of her hands, but without knowing what I did, and squeezing it between mine; alas! miss Cecilia, says I, what a sad reproach you just now made me? Your presence must for ever create satisfaction, and form my felicity; but,—I'm afraid your absence will be the greatest pain to me! and 'twill be impossible

for me to furvive it long.

Miss Cecilia was young and unexperienc'd. Cupid, at that instant, infinuated himself into her bosom as well as mine, and awak'd the most melting, the most delicious sensations. Whence could she have got weapons to defend herfelf, fince neither honour nor reafon could furnish me with any; and that I did not fo much as feek for any in these? She was overjoy'd to hear me deliver my passion at once in fuch foft language; and whether it were from a free impulse, or an involuntary emotion; she made such an anfwer as discover'd the greatest passion, and innocence at the same time. If, says she, you look upon my absence as so great an evil, why will you leave me? When one loves a person, methinks 'tis so sweet to be in their company! But I am not fure of it, fays she, looking upon me with bashfulness; for you never told me you did. I must

wing,

ween

hat a

me?

atis-

eat-

lible

eri-

ated

ine,

oft

fhe

nce

ish

ich

er-

at

ner

0-

n-

nd ne,

an

ne

t,

1-

I

st

must here declare my whole weakness; the short answer she gave, made me sensible to fomething I had never felt before; an emotion, a thousand times more sprightly and delicious, than all the pleasures united, which I had hitherto tasted in love. Now, that I blush to think of it, 'tis in vain for me to enquire what it was in those few words, that could raise such emotions in my breast. Was it their simplicity, which could not but discover the utmost tenderness in a young person, who, at the fame time, I knew was inform'd with the greatest good sense? Was it the found of a charming voice, whose impresfion mix'd with that which was already diffus'd over all my fenfes? Or rather, was it not the frame and disposition of my heart, which now felt an extafy of joy, to find another to sympathize with it in so happy a manner; and which triumph'd in some measure, to see such a blessing offer'd it, as it perhaps could not have prefum'd to desire?

Be this as it will, I now consulted my heart only, and accordingly addrest my self to miss Cecilia, in the most tender, the most passionate language, which seem'd to give her the utmost pleasure. She soon hinted, that absence would be as insup-

portable

her

ag:

per

wit

ten

pai

car

thi

1

211

Go

far

WE

die

an

ha

thi

fat

ne

da

DI

tic

I

tu

in

fle

pu

th

 $\Theta$ 

portable to her, as it could possibly be to me. I told her, that it should be as short as possible; in a word, that I was resolved to leave France with her father, and cross over into England, with her and the reft of the family. She feem'd mightily pleas'd at this resolution. Nevertheless, after confidering how long it might be before I could return to her; methoughts it would be impossible for Mr. R-m settle his affairs in less that two or three months; which both miss Cecilia and I should consider as so many ages. However, the proposid a thing which might prevent our being fo long absent from one another. Methinks, says she, you might have spar'd me this journey to Roan, had you offer'd my father to take me into your house; and to stay in it till such time as he had completed his affairs. I might have liv'd as privately there, as it will be possible for me to do in Roan, and then we would have embark'd together for England. Tho' this thought was not new to me; and that I had even rejected it, when it occur'd to me before our fetting out, because I was of opinion, that she would be as foon discover'd at my house as at her father's; it yet appear'd to me in a quite different light, now he herself

herfelf propos'd it. I revolv'd this thought again in my mind; and tho! I could not perfuade myfelf that the would be fafer with me ; I yet imagin'd that the little gnement which stood in the midst of my park, would be a very fecure afylum. I can't pretend to fay that wifdom fuggefted his reflection; no, tis certain that love, and frong defire of being for ever near my amiable Cecilia, inspired me on this occafion. These, after having prevail'd so far as to make themselves be heard, vere foon powerful enough to force obedience. I told miss Cecilia my thought, and it pleas'd her extremely. How unhappy it is, fays she, that you did not mink of it before! But is it too late yet? what hinders us from going back? my father will be overjoy'd to have me fo mear him; and then I may fee him every No persons, but such as you think proper, may know any thing of the afhir. She added a great many other particulars which I did not liften to, fo much Iwas delighted with this unexpected overture. I found fomething so soft, so sweet in this, that I was furprized I had not refected fully on it before. All the impulses of my heart prompted me to put this in execution at once. Nevertheless, when

be to fhort olv'd cross

e reft eas'd after

efore ts it

nd I

one ight

had

e as

hen

for new

it,

the use

to fhe felf

when I was about fixing myfelf in this resolution, I felt myself stopt, as it were, by a kind of fear, the cause of which I could not discover, and 'twas this involv'd me fo much in thought. In the mean while our coach went a great speed. Miss Cecilia observing that I was fix'd in meditation, took notice, that it would be needless to go any farther, in case what I had propos'd could be put in execution. I did not know what answer to make; and without being able to guess what it was that made me so irresolute, I started some objections to her against my own inclinations. She argued against them; and reflecting in how melancholy a manner she would pass her time in Roan, as the persons she was going to were wholly strangers to her; she complained, that, not to mention that the love I profess'd to have for her, ought to make her company dear to me; I discover'd but very little affection, in being thus in doubt whether I should grant what she requested of me.

I YIELDED to her defires, or rather to my blind inclination; and thereupon I bid the coachman turn back, and carry us to the private door which belong'd to my park, through which we could eafily get to the folitary tenement unperceiv'd. I was over-

joy'd

joy'd

rellin

gave

no le

thing

that I

ter'd

ness t

only

lia W

foeve

a fec

any (

exce

to le

any

to in

hear

very

ried

also

loon

and the i

tho'

ried

that

ing

pro

his

re,

hI

v'd

lis

be

at

H-

to

ess I

ly)

1;

n-

y

t

e

r

·

1

joy'd that we were return'd back; and telling miss Cecilia the pleasure that it gave me, she assur'd me that it gave her no less satisfaction. Nevertheless, something whifper'd to me every now and then, that I had taken a wrong step; but I flatter'd myself, in order to sooth the uneasiness this fill'd me with, that it proceeded only from the danger to which miss Cecilia would be expos'd; what precautions soever I might take, to keep this matter a secret. I therefore resolv'd not to let any one in the world know where she was except her father; and consequently not to let fo much as my fifter or niece know any thing of the matter. And the better to impose upon those, who perhaps might hear that I had gone out of my house, the very night that miss Cecilia had been carried off, as would be suppos'd; I resolv'd also to send my equipage to Paris, as foon as we should alight at the park door, and order the coachman not to return till the next evening. By this means, fays I; tho' the world should suspect that I carried you off, yet 'twill never be thought that I have hid you in my house. Having thus laid down my scheme, she approv'd every part of it.

VOL. IV.

Ì

I CAN-

I CANNOT fay, whether among my various readers, any of them will be able to guess the secret motives which prompted me to act in this manner; and to difcover what I myself was then ignorant of; or at least, what a blind and fatal pasfion prevented my perceiving. I have fince discover'd it; but the confusion it then fill'd me with, lessen'd perhaps the merits of my repentance; but I find my felf inclin'd to confess it in this place, out of a kind of justice, which obliges me to look upon this confession as a chastisement. Wisdom, virtue, study, alas! how faintly do you defend against the most shameful attacks, a heart which abandons itself to no other conduct but its own, and which takes no care to curb its defires? My fecret view in all the mysterious precautions which I us'd, in order to conceal miss Cecilia; that criminal view which, blinded by love, I could not fee; was only to fecure myself the pleasure of enjoying her company alone; and perhaps to take advantage of her frailty, by making her confent to my guilty wifnes. However, I myself was far from discovering this; 'twill even be found, in case this matter is attended to, that prudence ought to have fuggested quite different measures, had I laid

what long from R-his

laid

circ the hea its

virt owi into in t

mir pat wer dor

tur

bid for hor

gat my from whi

kep and MY

able

ipt-

dif-

rant

paf-

ave

n it

the

my

out

to

ent.

itly

ful

fto ich

fe-

ons Ce-

fed

feher

ad-

on-

lliv

atve

d I id

hid a fnare for miss Cetilia's inncoence; for what probability was there, that I could be longable to hide fuch an attempt, not only from my own family, but even from Mr. R and his lady. I was now bringing his daughter just under his eye; but this circumstance only serves to shew, how fac the passions are apt to blind a man. My heart had a secret tendency to satisfy all its defires, nevertheless, stopt, and terrified as it were, by some little remains of virtue and honour; it would have difown'd this guilty intention, had I enquir'd into the cause of its sensations; and being in this doubtful, this dark disposition of mind, it so happen'd, that I was not capable of taking, either fuch measures as were conformable to the dictates of wifdom, or fuch as were of a criminal nature.

Being now got to the park door, I bid the coachman drive away immediately for Paris; and as I intended to return home in my own coach, and stop at the gate where I commonly alighted, I bid my coachman, as foon as he was veturn'd from Paris, to wait for me in a lone place, whither I propos'd to walk on foot. I kept none but Dring to attend upon me; and bid him to go before to the little ho-

I 2

ing

ab

alr

lit

tu

OV

fil

pe

W

ev

m

fh

fa

bo

Ol

CC

g

d

h

ri

bi

li

fa

di

CI

fe

B

vel in the park, and to get a light. 'Tis certain that had my defires been innocent, I ought to have first taken care. to fend Mr. R-word of our arrival, and that we had chang'd our refolutions. But this did not so much as once occur to me, when I got to the park. <sup>2</sup>Twas still very dark. As my servants were fet out with the coach, and Dring was gone towards the house, I now found my felf alone with the dear object of my affec-Nothing could better discover the fondness she had for me, and that she was perfuaded I lov'd her tenderly; than the satisfaction she seem'd to taste, now she was walking by my fide, and leaning on my arm. I employ'd every passionate expression which love suggests, and she feem'd to listen to me with the greatest pleasure. We were now arriv'd at the little tenement, where Dring had prepar'd every thing necessary. Altho' we had not many eatables in this hovel, we nevertheless had fufficient to make a little collation, which was prepar'd in an instant. fays I to the lovely Cecilia, is the afylum you have chosen; were I sovereign of the universe, you should soon be as much mistress of it, as you are now of this little apartment; and you know a place, pointing

'Tis

care,

arri-

folu-

once

bark.

were

Was

my

ffec-

the

was

the

The

on

ex-

fhe

est

tle

ery

ny

ess

n,

is,

m

10

i-

e

t-

ing to my heart, where you enjoy a more absolute sway. To say the truth, I was almost inchanted at seeing her face. The little hurry of the walk, and the adventures of the night, diffus'dfo much beauty over her whole person, that I was as much fill'd with admiration as with love. She perceiv'd with great pleasure, the effect which her charms had upon me; and her eves declar'd she was tender, as much as mine (in their dumb language) told her that the was charming. As the night was very far advanc'd, I thought it would be proper to fend back Dring, in order that no body might fee him, when he should go out of the park on horseback. As he had come out of the house alone, he might go back to it, and appear in it, tho' I didn't. I bid him be fure to make as if he did not know, whether I were at Paris on in St. Cloud; and I order'd him to bring to the little hovel, a little after daylight appear'd, whatever might be neceffary to miss Cecilia. Upon this he withdrew, and left me alone with that amiable creature.

I AGAIN repeat; that I had not thus fent away my servants one after another upon an ill design, which had made me wish to be alone. The reader sees plainly,

eafy

1 2

She

ting

ver

tro tak

ble

pir

to

po

WI

co

you

21

n

n fo

9

h

that there was some reason for their go. ing away, and that hitherto every thing had been conducted very naturally. No vertheless, 'tis but too true, that my heart flatter'd itself with some delightful ideas, in proportion as those who were witnesses of all I did, went away. Dring was no fooner got out of the room, but I immediately felt the most extraordinary emotions. Cecilia's glances meeting mine, made my blood circulate with uncommon I cast my eyes downwards, and rapidity. continued filent for fome time, as tho' I had been imploy'd in admiring her beautiful hand. But in reality, I was in such confusion; that being under a kind of constraint, and not having strength enough to look up, I did not know how to recover myself, but by rising from table, and taking a few turns up and down the room. Miss Cecilia was filent, and seem'd impatient to know, in what manner I would open the conversation. I observ'd, that the fometimes directed her eyes to me, and a moment after cast them downwards. This only heightned my perplexity. heart feem'd ready to leap from my bofom. I could, with extafy, have thrown myself at her feet, but did not dare to do it; and had scarce power to walk up to her. However,

go-

thing

Ne-

heart

deas,

effes

s no

me-

mo-

une,

non

and

o' I

au-

ich

on-

gh

le,

he

d

d

l,

S.

y

However, fearing the would be uneasy to see me disturb'd in this manner, I at last went and sat down by her. She then turn'd her head to me, and putting on a forc'd fmile; ask'd me, in a very tender manner, whether any thing troubled me. I then could not forbear taking up one of her hands hastily. Troubled! fays I; Gods! troubled, now I fee you, whom I adore; and have the happiness to inform you of it, and the satisfaction of believing that you will liften to me with some pleasure! Could it be possible for me to forget who I am now with, and whose lovely hand I now hold? could I forget all I wish'd for, and all I have obtain'd? for furely, dear Ceeilia, you cannot refuse me your heart: Is it not already mine? In case I possess it, is there any room for me to be either unhappy or melancholy? I faid a thousand things more, with the same warmth and passion; for love had now gain'd an absolute conquest over my reason.

SHE listned to what I said; I read in her countenance that her heart overslow'd with tenderness and joy; and I tasted, in some measure, both her satisfaction and my own. In so tender a moment as this, could she deny me any thing? our

I 4

wishes

to T

her

mir

ing fo v

ma wit

me

aní wh

car

lo up

10

ftr

to

2

qu

th

in

d

m

1

n

wishes were mutual; and the suggestions of honour and virtue, were not attended to upon this occasion. I kiss'd her lilly hand a thousand times, and did not find that she once endeavour'd to draw it from me.—But who could believe it? 'twas in the very instant that her innocence and mine were just expiring, as it were, that I perceiv'd the dangerous precipice, from which I was going to throw myself; and I still cannot say, whether it was for mine, or my Cecilia's sake, that it pleas'd heaven to assist me, by the most unexpected of all miracles.

Miss Cicilia was tender enough, to go greater lengths than are confishent with modesty: but then, as she had receiv'd a very virtuous education; and that 'twas impossible, even for love itself, to blot out those impressions in an instant; she undoubtedly was oblig'd, no less than myself, to impose upon her reason; in order to calm the remorse which otherwise would cast a damp upon her pleasures. She was sensible, that as we were alone, love might prompt us to go farther than was consistent with duty; and perhaps she herself at first resolved not to indulge

the utmost of our wishes. Nevertheless,

some remains of modesty, which wanted

itions

ended

Tilly

find

from

twas

and

that

rom

and

for

as'd

ex-

to

ent

re-

nat

to

t;

n

r-

ſe

5.

to veil itself with some pretence; oblig'd her to draw away her hand fuddenly from mine. Heavens! fays she, what am I doing? and how is it possible for me to be so weak! will you promise, at least, to marry me? This question, altho' spoke with a tender and languishing air, made me shudder before I had thought what answer to give. I did not say a word; when perceiving the perplexity I was in; Good lord! fays she with a deep sigh, can't you determine! My confusion was to great, that not being able either to look upon, or make her the least answer; I again took one of her hands, and endeayour'd to hold it, notwithstanding her struggles to get it from me. She at last forced it away; and finding I did not fay a word, tho' she had again put the same question to me, she also continued filent.

We thus remain'd in the most odd situation that ever was heard of. A thousand thoughts occurr'd to my mind in an instant, and with so much consusion, that I knew not what to make of 'em. I did not even dare to lift up my eyes to miss Cecilia; and to let her read therein, what it was impossible for me to express in words. The charm which had blinded me, since I had receiv'd her from her sa-

I 5 ther

rep

her

cou

my

ma

int

and

ten

ma

de

Sn

Wa

fer

it,

an

m

m

hi

fic

he

ın

ther's hands, feem'd now to break away: Altho' my passion continued as strong as ever, I yet found my defires die away. Honour and respect began now to reaffume their former empire; and as this change restor'd my reason, I was seiz'd with the utmost terror, the moment I reflected on what had pass'd between us. Twas then, that reflecting much less on the reasons I had to rely on mis Geeilia's tenderness, than the dread I was under of her hating me henceforwards; I ventured to turn my eyes towards her, in order, if possible, to discover how she might be affected. She feem'd to be overwhelm'd with melancholy; and altho' her eyes were shut, and her head leaning backwards on the chair, I yet fancied I faw some tears steal down her cheeks. This fight struck me to the foul, and in my first emotions I was going to throw myfelf at her feet. I know not what turn love might have given to my expressions; but the fad Cecilia prevented my words. Alas! fays she, turning her head from me, in order to avoid my glances; leave me; I cannot listen to you any longer, for you have deceiv'd me; I am a vile creature, and ought to die with shame and confusion, This reproach

av:

25

ay.

re-

his 'd

2-

15.

on

2'5

er

n-

r-

ht

-

9,

V

t

reproach stung me to the foul. I swore to her by whatever was facred, that nothing could exceed the warmth and fincerity of my affections; and wish'd heaven might make an example of me, in case I ever intended to impose upon her. These protestations seem'd to calm her uneasiness, and thereupon she ask'd me, in the most tender tone of voice, why I refus'd to marry her; and whether I had any other defign when I declar'd that I lov'd her? Sne told me, that her father having long observ'd that I had an inclination for her, was perfuaded that I would ask his confent to marry; that he firmly expected it, the jesuit having assur'd 'em this over and over; that 'twas this supposition, as much as the persuasion he entertain'd of my honour and integrity, had prompted him to trust her in my hands; that he had order'd her before we fet out. to confider me as a man who might one day be her husband, and therefore that I should behave myself in such a manner, as might increase the affection I had for her; that the acknowledged, the had not made a proper use of his advice; that having been so filly as to believe I lov'd her to excess, she had also been so weak as to discover the affection she had for me; and I 6 that

eve

wh

hac

ide

for

ma

wo

ab I,

is

ev

CE

ın

20

f

n

r

a

that she had gone greater lengths than modesty allows, in giving me such evident marks of the tender affection she had for me: but, that after she had heard the jefuit and her father speak so many things to my advantage, and after having fo long studied my heart, and persuaded herself that I was a man of the strictest honour; she never could have thought, that I would ever have look'd upon this indulgence she had shewn me as a crime; and for having been fo simple, as not to disguise her heart. She added, at the fame time, letting fall fome tears, that tho' she was so young, she yet had too much sense not to see through all my artifices; and that I must necessarily be the most worthless wretch breathing, if I ever entertain'd any dishonest views when I address'd her.

This discourse, which she utter'd with all the grace imaginable; and what affected me still more, with such an ingenuous air, as plainly discover'd that what she had now spoke, slow'd infinitely more from the greatness of her sense, than from experience and cunning; this, I say, made such an impression upon me, as words could never describe. Whether it were the dread I was under, of being for ever

than

evi-

had the

ings

g fo

test

ght.

this

ne;

to

the

hat

00

Ir-

he

er

h

IS

e

e

ever excluded the possession of so inchanting a creature! or the confusion with which I was feiz'd, to confider that I had, in reality, deceiv'd her, by the false idea I had made her entertain concerning my intentions; whether it were reafon or transport, I could not forbear making the only confession, by which it would be possible for me to justify my felf. However, I did this by a round about way. Charming mifs Cecilia, fays I, throwing myself at her feet; heaven is witness, that no man ever lov'd more fincerely than I do. My heart is full of you; and I love you more dearly than ever man lov'd. Oh! that it were posfible for you to fee into the inmost recesses of it! lovely Cecilia, you'd then find that your image is deeply engrav'd in it! No, no, it cannot deceive you. It adores you. It feels, that the happiness of being yours, is the supreme good: it wou'd make me chuse to be your confort, rather than to be the greatest monarch upon earth. --- She interrupted me; and interpreting these last words in a manner agreeable to her wifnes, she said to me, (holding out her hand with a tender smile, which seem'd to shew that she was already confoled) how cruel you were,

to

tha

nov

the

ina

ouf

do,

gin

WO

ner

po

anc

an

ha

ber

H

ev

for

no

he

lef

ha

he

Sh

W

fe:

ki

ti

in

➂

explain your felf sooner! This answer confounded me still more; and there-upon I refus'd her my hand, and interrupting her; hate me, says I, look upon me with horror.—Or rather, pity my unhappy sate. Alas! dearest Cecilia, 'tis impossible for me ever to be yours; I am married.

This declaration threw her into an aftonishment, which can be much better felt than describ'd; she seem'd ready to faint away in my arms. She fix'd her eves upon me for some time, with an air of the wildest distraction; and tho' I consider'd them attentively, I yet cou'd not read her thoughts in them. At last, she recover'd herself, when she burst into a flood of tears, and vented the most moving complaints. She did not once mention me, but feem'd to forget that I was on my knees before her; when her grief being now pointed against her own person, she reproach'd herself bitterly with her imprudent conduct. I am loft, fays she, over and over, I am dishonour'd to all intents and purposes. Here her fighs and tears stopp'd her words for a moment, after which the again broke into the most mournful exclamations, . that

that she was a wretched creature; wou'd now be the scandal of her family, and

the sport of all who knew her.

oc

Ver

re-

er-

on

ny tis

I

an

er to

er

ir I

d

t

ft

r

As I had own'd my marriage to her, inadvertently; and was myself prodigioufly troubled, I did not know what to do, in order to calm her distracted imagination. Idid not, indeed, think that she would have afflicted herself in this manner; but rather, that she would have pointed all her refentment against me, and not herfelf. I look'd upon her with an air of fo much consternation, as wou'd have sufficiently justify'd me, had she been capable of attending to any thing. However, she still continued to turn her eyes from me, whatever might be the rea-But now I had resolution efon of it. nough to speak, when I protested that her complaints were altogether groundless; and that nothing which had now happen'd ought to give her the least pain, her honour being as uninjur'd as ever. She wou'd not give me time to conclude what I was faying, but rifing from her feat on a fudden, the ran from me with a kind of horror, calling me, at the fame time, by the most opprobrious names.

This sudden transport, plainly shewing that she was highly exasperated, I

was afraid she would run out of the room in spight of me; and that she very likely would be feen by fome of my fervants, as she was roving about the park, for it was now very near day-break. It would have been a mortal pain to me, had fuch an affair as this been discover'd; and it affected my honour no less than it did This reflection made me run to the door, and lock it; when having done this, I walked up to her, and altho' she endeavour'd to hide her face, I nevertheless took a chair and fat down by her. Her tears were still streaming, and this was fucceeded by fo deep a filence, that I was afraid fomething fatal had happen'd to her, after having seen her in these violent agitations. Nevertheless, after I had conjur'd her in the most respectful terms, to allow me a moment's hearing, she, at last, consented to listen to me. I began, by affuring her that her honour was as unblemish'd as ever. I prov'd to her, that we might very easily execute the plan which we had concerted, while we were in the coach. The moment that Dring is return'd, we may, fays I, acquaint your father with your being here; and your reputation cannot fuffer in the least, after 'tis known that he had confented

fent over that with

ing my

their this con

per wha

rea you be

ma adv

a f

red did wh

un no tw mod

kely

nts,

r it

uld

uch

lit

did

the

one

he

ne-

er.

is

at

ď

o-d

s,

fented to your being in my house. Moreover, fays I, I don't intend he shall know that I have spent part of the night alone with you. I, at first, did not intend to let my fifter and niece know of your being fo near them; but I have now chang'd my refolution, and I'll defire 'em to come to us, before I fend for your father. In case he should come to see you this morning, he'll find you in their company; and neither he, or any other person, will have the least suspicion of what has pass'd between us here. You, therefore, fays I, with a deep figh, have reason to be easy. Alas! mis Gecilia. you ought to be fo, for your honour will be no ways expos'd on this occasion. You may likewise depend upon having another advantage here, which you feem to have no less at heart; and that is, the being deliver'd from my presence, which is on a fudden become so odious, that you thought me worthy of the most injurious appellations. Heaven, who knows the rectitude of my foul, is conscious that I did not deserve them: the name indeed, which I justly merit, is, that of the most unhappy wretch breathing; but you have not thought fit to make a diffinction between ill-fortune and guilt.

I HELD

haf

tha

dit

we

wh

felf

hig

of :

fay

wh

in 1

it

VOI

dif

hav

wh

thi

bet

and

cili

WI

my

In

to

app

up

ho

per

an

**B** 

I HELD my peace, after having spoke these words with a most sad and mournful tone, and waited to hear what answer she'd make to them; however, the only vented a few fighs. I then observed that she open'd her eyes twice or thrice to look at me, but thut them a moment after. Her filence was a thousand times more grievous, than the most injurious expresfions cou'd possibly have been. I then gaz'd upon her with fo much attention, that my heart was again sensible to its former ardours; and the freedom which my reason had acquir'd a moment before, was immediately destroy'd. Grief and tears, fo far from leffening her charms, feem'd, on the contrary, to heighten the lustre of 'em. I seem'd to melt away as I gaz'd upon her; and my passion, which was enflam'd by the feveral incidents of the night, to a surprizing degree, appear'd now to have broke all limits; and an involuntary transport forced me to cry out, Gods! must I be hated by Cecilia! Is it possible that the strongest proof I cou'd give her of my esteem and love, shou'd draw down her hatred upon me? This short exclamation seem'd to make a stronger impression on her, than a long discourse had done. She curn'd about haftily

oke

nful

ne'd

ited

The

ook

ter.

ore

ref-

nen

on,

its

ich

re,

nd

ns, he

28

ch

of

p-

nd

ry

11

1

C,

3

e

g

ut

hastily towards me; and whether it were that what the was going to fay was premeditated; or that she had been rouz'd, as it were, by the few words abovemention'd which had escaped me; she deliver'd her felf in fuch terms, as gave me a much higher esteem than I had ever entertain'd. of her humanity and understanding. This, fays she, is a very obscure exclamation. which raises my curiosity to a very great degree; and heightens the confusion I was in with regard to you, the moment that it broke from you. I recollected, fir, your whole conduct, from the time you discover'd a friendship for my father; and have compar'd it with the circumstances which have happen'd this night. Methinks, I perceive a strange contradiction between your person and your behaviour; and I wish you cou'd affist me in reconciling them. I won't conceal, fays the, with an apparent air of tranquillity, that my resolution is fix'd with regard to you. In case it be true, that you had a design to impose upon my father, by a specious appearance of honour and integrity; and upon me, by a feign'd fincerity and hohour; I shall consider you not only as a perfidious and most wicked wretch; but an abominable monfter, whom we ought to

to fly from. But in case you are really what we thought you, how will you yet be able to persuade us that you are so, now you confess to me that you are married? when before this, you employ'd the most facred oaths and protestations, to persuade me of your passion, that is to fay, to seduce my innocence, and make me throw up all pretentions to modefty? Alas! I will confess to my shame, that I abandon'd myself to the suggestions of my inclination, and thought myself extremely happy, in being posses'd of such a lover as you. Is it possible for you to be a perfidious wretch? you have, fays the, weeping afresh, so tender, so amiable an air. Must I hate you, after you have fo long been dear to me! Tell me therefore, what I am to think of you; for I cannot live, in case you intended to impose upon me. I was going to answer her, when she interrupted me by faying, that I must not hope to impose upon her by idle stories; that the she had before been so simple, as to flatter herself that she was dear to me, because she then had no reason to doubt of it; she yet defied me to impose upon her hereafter; and that in case I should employ artifice, 'twould only ferve to encrease her contempt and hatred. I WAS

had riou had

I

greathis heig

fanc feer of t

was felf wha

que to on

lear and fy

posither frair in t

the ver cov

abo I h illy

yet

fo,

ar-

the

to

to

ike

y?

tI

of

X-

ch

to

ys.

2-

UC

ne

;

0

er

T

t

d

d

I was inchanted when I gaz'd upon her, but was much more fo when she spoke. I had not, 'till now, been engag'd in a ferious conversation with her, and therefore had not an opportunity of knowing the great depth of her understanding; so that this unhappy incident ferv'd only to heighten my despair, as it reveal'd a thoufand charms which 'till then I had not feen; and at the same time bereav'd me of the hopes, of even enjoying the innocent pleasure of admiring them, which was the only one I had proposed to my felf at first. I saw but too plainly, that what answer soever I might make to these questions, it would be impossible for me to justify myself to her satisfaction; and on the other fide, I was incapable of learching for evalions to impose upon her; and was fenfible, that I could never justify myself completely, unless it had been possible for her to read in my heart. She there would have feen, that in case some frailty had escap'd me, I yet was honest in the main; and fuch, undoubtedly, as the defir'd I should be, in order to recover her esteem. Perhaps she'd have discover'd this, without the circumstance abovemention'd, had she consider'd that I had reveal'd my marriage to her of my own

inex

mol

fror

me

the

heat

cho

mac

ing

Iw

that

mo

her

ftre

Ceci

I co

and

paf

Id

tou

afte

dov

was

lin

own accord; and at a time when the might suppose I would not have disclose it to her, had I really been fo vile a wretch as she imagin'd me to be. I was going to beg her to weigh this reflection, when I found it would be impossible for me to make a more folid defence; but as the words the spoke had affected me prodigiously, and that I had meditated for some time, what answer it would be proper for me to make; the look'd upon my filence as a tacit confession of my guilt, and was persuaded that her reproaches had quite confounded me. Upon this she rose up, when I entreated her to flay; but the frown'd upon me with the utmost indignation, and declar'd, that the would never have any thing to fay to me more, nor make my house an asylum; and be affur'd, fays she, that I'll go this inftant, and acquaint my father what a wretch you are.

The only reason of my being so circumstantial, is, to shew, by my example, to what fatal excesses the passions may carry us. I was so struck to see her in this passion, that seeing her get to the door, and myself at too great a distance from her to keep her from going out; I drew my sword, in such a transport as is

inexpressible;

she

3d

tch

en

to

he di-

or

0-

on

ny

7

p-

er

at

y

7-]]

mexprefible: and torn to pieces still more from the fear of losing her, than from the shame she threaten'd to bring me to. I cried, I would stab myself to the heart, in case she went away without hearing what I had to fay. The melancholy tone with which I spoke these words, made her turn her head, just as she was going to unlock the door; when the posture I was in frighted her to fuch a degree; that she continued motionless for some moments. Upon this, I threw myfelf at her feet in the place where I stood, and firetching out my arms to her; cruel Cecilia! fays I, hear me for a moment; I conjure you to liften to me, and you shall hear the story of the most unhappy man that ever liv'd. I confess my guilt, and don't pretend to justify myself, but am fure you will not deny me your compassion: Hear me but for a moment, for I die in case you refuse to do it. Cecilia was too tender-hearted, not to be touch'd with my earnest entreaties; and after continuing irrefolute for a moment, she took her hand from the lock, and fat down on a chair that flood near her. You wanted to frighten me, fays she, but I ought never to be so upon your account, lince you have employ'd fuch vile artifices.

fices. But let's hear what mighty matters you have to tell me. Hearing this I drew nearer to her; and love, which had, a moment before, made me furious and stupid, now made me guilty of indiscretion, by prompting me to reveal what I had resolv'd never to discover. Alas! says I, deign only, to hear me, and then see whether I deserve your hatred!

of I

and

her.

pari

Ito

how

of v

then

tion

face

al!

hap

natu

ceal

whi

of p

Thu

with

I re

colo

her

hide

they

guil

fible

cluc

acci

it w

a p

is in

I BEGAN by acquainting her with who I was; when I related part of the fad circumstances of my infant years. I afterwards acquainted her with most of the melancholy particulars which the reader has already heard, 'till I came to the grievous circumstances of my wife's infidelity. Tho' the incidents I related, had been of a less gloomy nature, yet the air and manner in which I describ'd them, could not but in the whole be vastly affecting. She at first listned to me with greater curiofity than emotion; but I observ'd that she seem'd to melt, in proportion as I told my fad tale, and would even every now and then change colour. She would often move about in her chair, as the' she fought for some new posture, in which she might listen to me with greater fatisfaction. I faw by the heaving

at-

s I

ich

ous in-

eal

er.

ne,

ho

ad

af-

he

ler

he

fi-

ad

n,

ıf-

th

[

0-

ld

r.

r,

e,

th

g

tc

of her breast, that she breath'd short, and fometimes a figh would steal from This however was nothing, in comparison of what she seem'd to feel, when field her of my inward agitations; and how strongly I had combated on the fide of virtue, or against grief. Her eyes wou'd then be fix'd upon me; the various emotions of her foul were painted on her face, infomuch that she seem'd to suffer all I related. At last I came to the unhappy part of my adventures, which must naturally affect her most. I had not conceal'd from her the excellent qualities which my wife posses'd, nor the excess of passion with which I once lov'd her. Thus I confess'd to her, that I was seiz'd with the sharpest pangs when I lost her. I represented my forrows in such lively colours, that I faw the tears stream from her eyes; and tho' she endeavour'd to hide them from me, by wiping them as they fell, yet others would immediately guil from her eyes, fo that 'twas imposfible but I must see 'em. Having concluded; fuch, fays I, is the heart you have accused of artifice and perfidy. I believ'd it was entirely cur'd of love, and become a prey, for ever, to grief. But as it is impossible for it to cease to be up-VOL. IV. K right

₿

right and fincere, neither can it help be. ing tender. I faw you, lovely Cecilia; I drank in love at my eyes; and was inform'd with a stronger passion than ever I felt before. Your delightful prefence banish'd all my forrows. Delicious paffion | alas! that alone would have made the remainder of my days happy, for my desires extended no farther. loft fight of the invincible obstacle which ought to suppress them, and you yourself are fensible, with how careful an eye I watch'd over 'em for some time; but is it furprifing that they should go a little beyond due bounds, when I was capable of adding to the pleasure of adoring you, that of having a place in your heart; of learning it from your own mouth, and of receiving a thousand tender affurances of it? Is not every man, when he is raised to such felicity as I tasted, apt to swerve from the dictates of wisdom. Besides, please to recollect whether I have abused your goodness so far, as to deserve the opprobrious names with which you aspersed me? Did I not at once reveal to you the unhappy ties, which keep me from being yours? Can you reproach me with misleading you into one single error. No \_\_\_ I have purfued the most rigid laws

law fuci

defe

ing Th tha

pal fpii

and

gav diff this

lov

zir, dej

tho

her to and

fix

toc

uni

diff

laws of virtue and honour: I have put fuch a constraint upon myself, as merity your compassion and esteem, so far from

deserving your hatred.

be-

ia;

was

han

re-

ous

ide

for

ver

ich

elf

I

15

tle

ole

ng

t;

h,

1-

ne

ot

n.

re.

e

u

0

I HAD spent almost an hour, in relating these several adventures of my life. The agitation I had been in before, and that which I felt, during this long and passionate discourse, almost exhausted my spirits, which miss Cetilia took notice of, and discover'd some uneafiness upon that This was the first mark the gave, that a change was wrought in her disposition. She advis'd me to take some thing to chear up my spirits, and I follow'd her advice. I then came up to her again, but with fo fad, so desponding an air, that I had not perhaps appear'd more dejected in my greatest missortunes. Altho' I thought myfelf infinitely oblig'd to her, for this testimony the gave me of her kind uneafiness, I yet did not dare to look her in the face. I lay trembling and fearful at the feet of a young girl of fixteen, as the I had expected from her mouth, the decision of my fate. She had too much penetration not to discover by my air and countenance, that I was vaftly uneafy in my mind. Nothing is so easily discover'd as the indications of sincerity, K 2 even

med

mif

tha

him

feve

Cec

fhe

tha

fta

fea

gre

tha

thi

no

in

pa

pe

th

do

V

n

a

tl

W

n

even without the aid of experience. She was already reconcil'd to me; and was griev'd to find it would be impossible for us, to be ever join'd in the bonds of marriage. However, she did not tell me this herself. but only affum'd a more smooth and serene air, and began to discourse me with her usual affability. She ask'd me several questions with regard to my wife; what was the cause of her inconstancy; whither she was withdrawn to, and if I still had some regard for her? I answer'd these several particulars with the utmost fincerity, and we did not change the fubject of our discourse, till the time was come when I had order'd Dring to come back again.

HE came, when she herself desir'd him to whisper to my sister and niece, and acquaint them that we were in the park, and waited for them there with the utmost impatience. She had strictly enjoin'd him, not to let a soul in the house besides know any thing of our being in the tenement. You'll come back to us, says she, as soon as you've done this, and then I have something else to desire of you. Dring turn'd about to me, in order to know my commands, but sinding I did not give him any, he went out immediately,

he

ras

is, ge.

lf,

th e-

i

d

ft

)-

S

e

mediately, in order to execute those of mis Cecilia. He might justly be surprized, that I had not once open'd my lips before One would have thought, that the several past circumstances, had given miss Cecilia some authority over me; and that the affum'd the air of it, as much as I did that of obedience and submission. I was standing up, but she desir'd me to be feated; my hat and fword being on the ground, she bid me take 'em up, in order that my fifter might not mistrust any 'Tis true, indeed, that she did not discover the least pride or haughtiness, in thus ordering me to do thefe feveral particulars. She deliver'd herfelf as a person who is certain she is lov'd; who still loves, but is afraid of owning it; butat the fame time wishes she may be thought to do so, and is not forry to have it perceived. With regard to myself, I obey'd as much thro' shame, if I may presume to express myself in this manner, as from love. My being a husband, lessen'd me to so great a degree in my own imagination, that I thought miss Cecilia might use me with what contempt she pleased, since she still fuffer'd me to be so happy as to enjoy a moment of her company. I could not think any chains which she should think fit

who

We

be

lec1

this

fua

fcr

wa

fen

dic

of

cei

on

be

be

pr

in

be

lin

to

g

b

th

W

fit to put on me, too weighty. Such was the excess of my weakness. I was the sport of love, and of my own heart. My fifter and niece being come, they were vaftly furpriz'd when they heard the unhappy circumftance, which had oblig'd Cecilia to conceal herself for some time in my park. They promis'd to give her their company all day long, and to do whatever lay in their power to divert her. We agreed, that in order to conceal this matter from the fervants, my fifter and her daughter should pretend to want to take the air of the park sometimes; that they should lie in the hovel, and get a bed carried into it, which was enough, there being one in it already. Twould be an easy matter for them to get provifions into it without occasioning the least suspicion. Dring and the two fervants who were in Paris with my equipage, could order that affair very well, without any other affistance; and I myfelf had fo often taken my meals there, that this would not be a new thing. Whatever elfe could be wanting, might be fent thither with as little difficulty. The only difficulty would be, how to keep this affair from

Mrs. Lallin for any time; for it would be impossible for my fifter not to see her,

Such

Was

cart.

they

lithe

ig'd

e in

her

do

ner.

this

ind

to

at

11

h.

ld

i-

ft

ts

whenever she should make her a visit. We therefore concluded, that it would be absolutely necessary to let her into the fecret; and the only difficulty I found in this, was, her being of the Romish perfualion; and confequently that the might scruple to conceal a heretic; however, I was perfuaded she had too much good sense to boggle at this; and besides, I did not see it was necessary, to inform her of the real cause why miss Cecilia was con-Hereupon we refolv'd to tell her only, that her father had defir'd she might be conceal'd in my house, for fear of her being carried off by a lover. Too much precaution sometimes ruins an affair. An ingenuous confession would have had a better effect upon a woman of Mrs. Lallin's character, than evasion and artifice; this would have engag'd her, in honour, to fecrecy; whereas, not being upon her guard, because nothing of privacy had been enjoin'd her; she did more harm, thro' imprudence, to miss Cecilia, than we could possibly have dreaded, had we acquainted her with the whole affair.

We fent for her immediately, for fear left a longer delay should raise some suspicion in her mind. Being come, we inform'd her of no more particulars than

K 4

ha

had been agreed upon between us. Miss Ce. cilia afterwards fent Dring to acquaint her father that she was nearer him than he imagin'd. We thought proper not to lie down to take a little rest, 'till he came back. But this I wanted more than any one, for all my fenses were still in very great disorder. Dring came back, and told us, that Mr. R -, according to what was agreed upon between us, gave out that his daughter had been stole, and that he pretended to fearch for her every where. He added, that he approv'd very much of the change we had made in our defign; and that he'd come and return me thanks in person, the very first opportunity, for the friendship I had shewn for him and his daughter. Miss Cecilia blush'd when this part of the story came to be related, and I was more disconcerted than she. By good fortune, I had retir'd to one end of the room with her, in order to hear the answer which Dring brought. But foreseeing that hereafter I should seldom have the happiness to discourse her in private, her blushes seem'd to raise my courage, and I spoke to her with greater boldness than I did an hour before. Without once mentioning the word love, I conjur'd her to remember that 'twas in her

her mise griev with mela Mis

men tho'

on a

you me caf

be

to

an or

as he re

an N

i

s Ce-

t her

ima-

Own But

all

for-

that

reed

gh-

ded

ed.

the

nd

in

bi

en

d

r

her power to make me either happy or miserable, and that death would be less grievous to me than her hate. The tone with which I spoke these words, was as melancholy as my air and countenance. Miss Cecilia look'd upon me for some moments without making me any answer, as tho' she had been in doubt whether she should indulge me this favour. Neverthelefs, I observ'd her eyes to look milder on a fudden, and was furpriz'd to fee her floop her head towards me, and fay; poor, unfortunate man! I really pity you! --- She then, after paufing a moment, faid; I'll tell you however; in case you really love me, you may still be happy. Saying these words, she left me and went to the ladies.

I was not calm and unruffled enough to appear before them; for my anguish would have appear'd in my countenance, and I wanted to conceal it from every one. Upon this I went out of the room, as though I withdrew purposely to give her an opportunity of taking a little rest; and being unwilling to be seen by any of my servants, since my sister and Mrs. Lallin knew of my return, I struck into the park, with a design of indulging myself in reslection. Those which

KS

first

we

fall

her

bo

hay

ho

to

for

fro

an I

I,

an th

m ha

pr

m

I

br

fe

th

first occurr'd, did not relate, as they had hitherto done, to the difeases of my heart. or the disorder of my reason. Altho' I could not but be fenfible of the gloomy situation of my mind, I nevertheless ftrove to footh it as much as possible. I even banish'd such ideas from it with a kind of fear. Remorfe and shame seem'd to wind themselves round me, as the' they fought to enter my foul; and I, on the other fide, seem'd to struggle perpetually to keep them back. What shall I fay? I now fondled, as it were, my evils; and was grown fo blind, that the remedy was more obnoxious to me than the poison.

What therefore now employ'd my whole foul, was, the obscure meaning of the last words which miss Cecilia spoke to me; and the tender marks of her compassion, which she bestow'd upon me as she went away. I endeavour'd to dive into the meaning of those words, but could not. I did not doubt but she still had some affection for me; nay, I was sure she had, for love is hardly ever deceiv'd. But after what had past the night before, I did not find the least room to hope for the happiness with which she had endeavour'd to inspire me: if you love

had

art,

o' I

my

less

ole.

ha

n'd

ho'

on

-90

all

ny

he

an

14

g

C

1-

15

70

11

11

S

love me, you may still be happy: these were her words! alas! love her, howfaint is that expression! I rather adore her. But in case it appear'd manifest to us both, that neither of us ought to procure happiness, at the expence of virtue and honour; how will it be possible for her to reconcile these jarring particulars? furely no way can be found; and therefore to hope it would be a mere illusion. In case I have any happiness to expect from her, it can be that only of feeing and loving her. Let this be the limits. I did not propose any other. Alas! fays I, I ought indeed not to exceed those bounds; but do I now keep within them? and if I have already gone too far beyond them, will it now be an easy matter for me to return back to them? This unhappy night had, indeed, wrought a furprizing change in my mind. The body must certainly have an accountable power over the foul. From the moment that I had touch'd miss Cecilia's hands; had been alone with her; had intoxicated my felf, as it were, with her breath; and that her glances had shot into my heart; I felt a strange uneafiness whenever I was absent from her. Methoughts something whisper'd to me every moment, that a most

con

fer

kno

rea

up

She

fhe

po

on

pro

to

giv

an

in

ac

qu

ha

ch

fo

po

w. ef

fo le

ra

1

I

most essential part of myself was wanting. I was carried, as it were, towards her, by something stronger than all the emotions of sympathy, and as powerful as enchantment. The bare sight of her, therefore, sooth'd my passion, but in a very faint manner: to make me happy, it was necessary that I should possess her, whom I look'd upon as my only treasure. This I cou'dn't now expect; and consequently love, which I statter'd myself would form my felicity, cou'd hencefor-

wards only make me wretched.

AFTER these useless reflections I took a few hours sleep. In the evening I went to St. Cloud, in order to wish her highness a good journey, who was to set out the next day with the king and the whole His majesty pretended to undercourt. take this journey, merely to take a view of the frontier cities of Flanders; but'twas whifper'd, that a deeper defign was conceal'd under this; and that a refolution had been already taken, to make war against Holland. 'Twas of great importance to France, to get Great-Britain on it's fide; or at least that it should be neuter, whilst the French army was engag'd against the Dutch. Asking Charles II. had a very great affection for her highness, she confequently

ant-

ards the

rful

er,

n a

er,

re. se-

elf r-

k

nt

1-

It

V

confequently was capable of being highly ferviceable on this occasion; and twas known a little after, that this was the fole reason why Lewis XIV. insisted so much upon her accompanying him to Flanders. She had even promis'd king Lewis, that the would go over into England, purposely to confer with her royal brother upon that account. Without explaining the project that was upon the anvil, she hinted to me, that she wish'd king Lewis wou'd give her leave to cross over into England, and believ'd he would indulge her defires in that particular. Her highness asked me after this, whether I was willing to accompany her in the voyage? This question perplex'd me a little. I could have wish'd to go for the sake of my children, as it could be scarce possible for me to meet with a more favourable opportunity, to remove all the difficulties which might arise, with regard to the estate that was to devolve on my children: but then the reader may guess the reafon, why I had a strong inclination not to leave France. Accordingly I made a few random excuses to her highness, which the was so good as to allow of.

AFTER I was come from the dutchess, I paid a visit to Mr. R——, whom I found

fu

hi

m

to

R

p

found at home; but was very formy to find the jesuit, who was come to confole Mr. R upon hearing that his daughter had been run away with. This zealous comforter, who was fensible that I had fome affection for mils Cecilia, whisper'd me in the ear, and said, that he did not doubt but I was as much troubled as her father could be; and that he intended to do me the same office, as he was then indulging that gentleman. Hearing him fay this, I begg'd him to delay this, at least, 'till another day. However, he was fo far from being discourag'd, at my delivering these words with fo cold an air; that he answer'd, he was come from Paris purposely to spend the night at my house; and that he had perfuaded himself I would not refuse him that favour. His perfifting in this manner, made me very angry: for as I had no manner of inclination to murder half the night in discoursing with him; and intending to go and visit miss Cecilia and her two companions, in their apartment in the park; I gave him to understand, by proper innuendo's, that his vifit would not be at all grateful to me that day. This jesuit was, like most of his brethren, a very fubrle fellow; fo that I don't doubt but he

## Mr. CLEVELAND. 231

DITY

conthat

ith.

ible

lia.

he

ou-

he

arlay

with
as
he
rat
r,
nno

t



so teornals Caudar for radice 1 awas specifi

her, but once there was always

THE



THE

## Mr. CLEVELAND, NATURAL SON

## Oliver Crommell.

BOOK VII



SPENT forne weeks in the uneafy fituation of mind, which I just now represented. I us'd to see miss Cecilia several times a day, or rather I was incessantly with her, but then there was always fomebody

with

wit fuf and fhe Th COI

bei WO pri

to an

na pe

Бy for tie fhe

ing fit no

as th

m

pl tic

of

th

fai

with us; for her three companions never fuffer'd her to be alone, and her father and mother came so often to see her, that she very feldom had a minute to herself. Tho' the opportunity I had of feeing and conversing with her, prevented me from being engag'd in other affairs; because it would have been impossible for me to deprive myself voluntarily of her presence; I yet was not more easy upon that account. My blind desires still continued to exercise their tyranny over my heart and all my fenses; and her presence must naturally heighten my wishes. I was perpetually thinking on the mysterious words by which she had endeavour'd to comfort me; and I waited, with an impatient submission, for the time when she should please to let me into their meaning. I did not dare to gratify my curiofity in this particular; besides, I could not have found an opportunity to do this, as we were never together alone; and then I did not prefume to communicate my thoughts in writing for fear of difpleasing her. There was but one reflection only, which was fometimes capable of foothing my anguish. I consider'd that as the difcover'd fo much complaifance and good nature to me upon all occasions;

0W

rio

1115

tue

It

dat

it

col

ce

for

ha

fel

fle

no

ha

of

de

Sc

h

P

W

fo

tl

n

t

n

e

casions, I consequently must still have fome share in her affection. Now, would I fay to myself, in case she loves me, I confequently must be present to her mind; The must still pity me, and wish me hap. py; and in case it depends on her to make me fo, she'll do all that lies in her power to create it. I therefore must Jeave the care of this to her, and must -wait till she acquaints me how it can be obtain'd. This, certainly, was not a just way of arguing, and was the effect of fear rather than of love; for I ought to have confider'd, that a young lady of Cecilia's good sense, had indulg'd me a very great favour, in permitting me to entertain the least hopes, after knowing that I was married. But to confess the truth, which possibly may recover me the esteem of my readers, some remains of honour and virtue were added to my fears. Uncertain with regard to the meaning of the offers which Cecilia had made me; and not being able to explain them, with the least shadow of reafon, I trembled when it occur'd to me, that they, perhaps, might not be agreeble to the dictates of modesty. The experience I had during the first night, had taught me both her weakness and my own :

have

vould

ne, I

ind;

hap-

er to

her

must

mult

n be

ot a

ffect

ight

ady

me

me

W-

fefs

ver

re-

led

to

lia

X-

2-

C,

6-

0

d

y

own; for altho' she had come off victorious in that dangerous kind of combat; his nevertheless certain, that her virme had been put to the greatest trial. It might be again exposed to the like danger; possibly I myself might wish it to be fo; but this defire was a monster that did not dare to appear; which conceal'd itself in the most retir'd receffes of my heart; and which my reafon would have been able to stifle, had it spoke loud enough to make itfelf be heard. From these several reflections it may be concluded, that I was not altogether criminal, but vaftly unhappy. However, I was upon the point of being infinitely more fo. The reader may prepare himself to hear a new scene of misfortunes.

hopes which had thrown me into such perplexity, had advanc'd nothing but what she thought it in her power to perform. But she wanted my assistance for this purpose, and was surpriz'd to see me so backward in offering it, after she had explain'd herself so far. In the time, therefore, when fearfulness or duty forc'd me to silence; she wish'd for rothing so earnestly, as to hear me ask from her, what

he

cha

it.

ing

par

25

had

10 1

go Th

nie

nev

ver

and

ret

of

for

Wa

tio

he

ce

Wa

an

W

얽

da

p

what she was so desirous of speaking to me about. She would even have doubted the constancy of my affection, sinding me thus cold, as it were, had not my uninterrupted assiduity, and the passionate air with which I always approach'd her, been a strong indication of my love.

DURING this, I had receiv'd frequent visits from the jesuit, who was ever talking of miss Cecilia, and expressing the greatest forrow whenever he mention'd her suppos'd flight. He even affected to be persuaded of the truth of it; and thereupon endeavour'd to comfort me with a very ferious air, as tho' he believ'd me to be deeply afflicted. But befides the conjectures he had form'd at Mr. R-'s; so artful a man as he was, cou'd eafily discover by my answers, that I wasn't so much affected with the loss of my mistress, as was natural for one fo fond as myself to be. He therefore was more firongly confirm'd in the thought he at first entertain'd, viz. that this clopement was only an artifice to impose upon the world; and to conceal fomething, the mystery whereof he cou'dn't yet dive into. As his curiofity and over-active zeal, prompted him whenever he was at my house, to observe whatever past in it; he

ng to

bted

ding

v un-

onate

her,

uent

talk-

the

on'd

cted

and

me

be-

be-Mr.

was.

ers,

the

one

ght

pe-

pon

the

to.

my

t;

he

he foon discover'd that there was some change in the methods and œconomy of Altho' he always heard at his coming, that I was in my folitude in the park, I yet did not receive him in it as I had always done before; for now I had order'd that word shou'd be brought to me of his being come, when I used to go and wait upon him in the great house. The ladies, particularly my fifter and niece, who were always with miss Cecilia, never appear'd before him; fo that he never faw any other woman but Mrs. Lallin, and the too always in the evening, when the return'd out of the park; so that in most of his visits, he seldom saw any other perfon but me. This change, which perhaps was not brought about with fufficient caution, raised his suspicions to a very great height. He didn't doubt but I was concern'd in miss Cecilia's elopement; but was perfuaded that she was in my house, and that fomething vaftly mysterious was conceal'd under this intrigue.

ALL that now remain'd for him to do, was to find it out. Possibly he at first guess'd the real affair; but as he did not dare to try any methods, the success whereof he was not sure of, he employ'd such an one as was infallible. Mrs.

Lallin

R

Lallin had made choice of him for her confessor; and he thought she could inform him of all he defir'd to know. And indeed, after having employ'd the greatest artifice, by giving her to understand that he wanted to discourse her upon an affair in which the falvation of her foul was concern'd; he afk'd her whether mis Cecilia was not conceal'd in my house; and whether I and the rest were not acting a religio-comical farce? Mrs. Lallin, who imagin'd it would be a crime to conceal the truth from her father confesfor, was prodigiously puzzled. I since heard, from her own mouth, that finding the was in doubt with regard to the anfwer she should make, he answer'd all her fcruples by the following dilemma. The thing, fays he, you are afraid of revealing to me, either is lawful, and confequently allow'd of by the principles of our most holy religion, or it is not fo. In case it is not allowable, you cannot conceal it from me without committing a deadly fin; and in case it be lawful, you may fecure your peace of mind, by opening your felf to your confessor; and 'tis plain you can run no risque in this, since it will infallibly be veil'd under the fecrecy of confession. Hearing him say this,

the cea

thi

rea lik rer per

ry wi to

up cel

the

M he ter

an bu of

Ci

m

de

r her

ld in-

And

great-

ftand

on an

foul

ether

my

were

Mrs.

rime

con-

fince

ding

an-

all

ma.

re-

Offof

fo.

not

ga

UQ

en-

EIS

ice

fe-

ay

is,

his, the answer'd all the questions he put to her. Altho' Mrs. Lallin didn't know the real cause why miss Cecilia was concal'd in my house; he yet guess'd the real cause of it, when she told him so unlikely a tale, viz. that her father had her remov'd to my house, for fear that a person who had stole her away should carwher off! He was too well acquainted with whatever related to the family, not to know that miss Cecilia had been brought up in fo recluse a manner that I must neceffarily be her only lover. But he with reason suppos'd, that the carrying off which her father dreaded fo much, was the king's order for her being confined in convent. This he was more strongly persuaded of, when after having ask'd Mrs. Lallin a great number of questions, he at last made her confess, that I intended to return to England very foon; and hearing this, he no longer doubted but he had discover'd the whole mystery of the affair; and in all probability argued thus --- Miss Gecilia is conceal'd in Cleveland's house; and this can be done upon no other account, than that she may thereby have an easy opportunity of quitting the kingdom, Cleveland alfo deligns to l'ave e; that is, he intends to

ea fh

m

h

**B** 

to convey her to England.—They have defer'd their departure for some time; this is done, in order that Mr. R—may have time to dispose of his effects, after which they'll all set out together.—No conjectures could possibly appear more just. But then, the jesuit's penetration will not be so surprising, when the reader is told, that at this time, there were many examples of the same kind every day; multitudes of protestant samilies slying their country continually, in order to avoid the persecution with which they were threatned.

As the jesuit had already meditated a project, highly worthy his zeal, from the ideas which my coldness suggested, and the confusion he saw me in, when we met at Mr. R-'s; the particulars which Mrs. Lallin acquainted him with, made him act upon a new motive. Poffibly he might have entertain'd fome affection for me till that time; but he fince was fo offended at my conduct, that he afterwards breath'd no other fenfations than those of hatred and revenge; for I cannot ascribe to any other cause, the extremes to which he immediately carried matters. Mr. R-always liftned to his instructions with fo much feeming earnestness, fects, ther. opear oenewhen here kind t faally, with

rom ted, hen rtinim ive.

me he hat

ons or I the ied

to

îs,

carnestness, that he did not doubt but he should at last make a convert of him; and was perfuaded that he shou'd have much less trouble with his daughter. As he had done me very great service, he fancied this would make me the more willing to attend to him; and that he should thereby have, one time or other, an opportunity of bringing me over to the Romish persuasion. Three conquests of this importance, would have footh'd his vanity prodigiously; for nothing was at that time more in fashion among ecclefiafticks, than charity and zeal for the conversion of their wandring brethren, as they then call'd the protestants. So that, as he accus'd none but me of robbing him of his hopes, and the fruit of his labour, fince I had advis'd Mr. R- to go to England with his family; he resolv'd to make me know, that he was not to be impos'd upon with impunity. He, however, had too much cunning, to acquaint Mrs. Lallin with his defign; but at his taking leave of me, he waited upon the archbishop of Paris, whom the king had impower'd to act with an almost absolute authority, in all ecclefiastical matters. There he drew me in the most odious colours; reprefented me as an emissary of the church; VOL. IV.

m

hi

ev

by

W

pi

W

fh

ti

vi

ge

in

ha

M

hi

u

gi

to

W

hi

af

no

di

af

ar

to

he

T

th

fu

of England; who was come into France, upon no other account but to ferve the protestants, and favour their slight into The archbishop, whose name England: was Mr. de Perefixe, had too much good fense to yield blindly to the impulse of the jefuit's zeal. However, he thought this too important an affair to be neglected; and thereupon he caus'd strict enquiry to be made into my character, and the motives which kept me in France. Some of my neighbours inform'd his lordship, that I, indeed, did not profess any religion, but led an easy and irreproachable life; and that the dutchess of Orleans seem'd to have a very great esteem for me. This testimony made him suspend his resolutions, till his majesty's and her royal highness's return. His lordship only set several ecclefiaftical spies of St. Cloud over me; whom he order'd to inform him of whatever they could hear with regard to my conduct.

Notwithstanding this, the jesuit still continued to visit me regularly; and in his conversation with Mrs. Lallin, he gather'd whatever might affist the vengeance he meditated. He had carried matters so far, as to advise the archbishop to confine me in the Bastile, and to shut miss

ce,

the

nto

me

the

his

d;

to

of

nat

on,

e;

b'ı

his

u-

h-

re-

er

of.

to

it

br

he

n-

d

p

ut-

ifs

mis Cecilia in a convent. He had even hinted to that prelate, that besides the evil I should be prevented from doing by their throwing me into prison; this would perhaps be an excellent method to procure my conversion: because, as I' was vastly fond of miss Cecilia, I then should be prompted from a double motive, to embrace the Romish religion; viz. the strong defire I should have to get my liberty, and the impatience of feeing a woman I ador'd. As he fancied he had gain'd fo strong an ascendant over Mrs. Lallin, as to make her enter into his views, when they should be cloak'd under the specious appearances of religion, he communicated this last project However, policy and artifice were the chief motives which prompted him thus to confide in Mrs. Lallin. archbishop had declar'd, that he would not touch me, 'till his majesty and the dutchess were return'd. The jesuit was afraid of my flipping away to England; and his defign, in thus opening himself to Mrs. Lallin, was, in order to engage her to give him notice of my departure. Tho' he had difguis'd his intentions in the most artful manner, he yet did not succeed according to his wishes; for his L 2 uncommon

uncommon zeal raised the suspicions of his confident; for Mrs. Lallin trembled when he mention'd the Bastile and a nunnery; and her affection for me, prevailing over every consideration, she one day came and told me all that had pass'd be-

for

WC

no

m

gr

m

m

CC

C

to

tl

t

f

tween the confessor and herself.

THE reader may imagine that this fill'd me with the highest astonishment. You have ruin'd us, madam, fays I, by your indifcretion. Had you forgot what treatment we met with in Angers and Saumur? We are in a hundred times more danger in Paris. The dutchess is absent, and I have now no protector. These reproaches brought tears into Mrs. Lallin's eyes, but this was a useless remedy. I then defir'd her to repeat, even the minutest circumstances, of whatever she had heard; but these only fill'd me with the highest dread. I thereupon refolv'd to fend word to Mr. R---, that I wanted to speak with him immediately, about business of the highest confequence. He came to me forthwith, when we discours'd a long time, on the danger to which his family and I were expos'd. Had it been, fays he, any other time but this, I would have advis'd you not to value the jesuit's machinations; for

s of

bled

un-

ail-

day

be-

his

nt.

by

nat

nd

es

is

r.

3.

n

r

for his majesty is so just a prince, that he would not fuffer a foreigner to be ill us'd; but I must confess to you, that as matters now stand, I don't see but you are in as much danger as myself. I am more griev'd, says he, upon your account than my own; for 'tis plain, that your friendship for me, and the love you have for my daughter, have brought this calamity upon you. Upon what pretence could the government seize you, but for concealing my daughter, and intending to procure our escape into England? 'Tis this circumstance gives me pain, and I would with pleasure give half my blood, to atone for the injury I have done you. This generous man was fo affected as he spoke, that the tears trickled down his cheeks. I begg'd him to believe, that fo far from repenting what I had done for his daughter; I should be very glad to do him service, tho' what I held dearest in the world, was to be the purchase of I cannot fay whether it were the affecting tone of voice with which I spoke, or bare friendship, which prompted him to explain himself farther; but after having mus'd a moment; let us quite unbosom ourselves, says he: You love Cecilia; she's my only child; you are fenfible L 3

bei

**fho** 

gre

had

the

co

di

to

i

a

fible that she'll be a good fortune; I therefore would advise you to marry her. This is the only means by which you can ward off the danger with which we are threatned; you cannot be punish'd for an giving an asylum to a woman, whom you intended to make your wife.

HEARING these words I embraced him with transport, but hadn't power to once open my lips. He feem'd to be vaftly furpriz'd at my filence, when I cry'd out: Dearest friend! if you know that I love Cecilia, how can I have the face to tell you that I'm married? \_\_\_So unexpected a declaration, disconcerted him prodigioufly. I suppose that he had hitherto depended upon my marrying his daughter; and that this only had prompted him to entrust her with me. I recollected that she herself had told me so. But now all my love and my misfortune tortur'd my foul in the fame inftant; fo I cou'd not fuppress a thousand passionate and melancholy complaints, which then broke from me. Mr. R -- faw but too plainly, that there was fomething very extraordinary in this adventure. What idea foever he till then had entertain'd of my prudence and honour, he now, in all probability, fuspected the fincerity of my passion; and being e; I

narry

hich

hich

ish'd

nan,

him

nce

fly

ut:

ve

ell

ed

gi-

e-

0

t

I

being afraid left his daughter's virtue should be in danger, whom he knew had a great affection for me, he left me after we had exchang'd a few more words. We were then in one of the walks in the park, when he walk'd towards the hovel in it. I now continu'd alone, deeply involv'd in thought. As we had always been very familiar, I didn't even go after him; because he told me at his going away, that he intended to lie in my house that night.

ABOUT a quarter after I faw him coming back. The only reason why he went away so suddenly, was his uneasiness for his daughter. He went to her, in order to know from her own mouth, how matters stood between us; and to inform her, that as I was married, it would be criminal in her to receive my addresses. What he then heard fill'd him with the highest joy, which I saw plainly in his face as he approach'd me. He came up, and taking me in his arms, I won't, fays he, conceal from you, that I was very uneasy when I left you. You have a wife; this you told me indirectly; I knew that you lov'd my daughter, and that she return'd your passion; possibly paternal tenderness prevail'd a moment over friendship. But why didn't you let

and

th

in

th

0

let me into this fecret as well as Cecilia? I then would have told you at once, that your misfortune may be remedied. I am even surpriz'd that you are ignorant of what is generally practis'd on these occasions: and my daughter, who is not a child, has feen an example of it in our family. She told me, that she herself offer'd to inform you of it, and therefore was furpriz'd that you didn't enquire farther. I answer'd between joy and fear, that so far from receiving with coldness, some obscure words which miss Cecilia had dropt; they, on the contrary, had fill'd me with the highest uneafiness, and I was perpetually reflecting on them; but that as I had never been so fortunate as to guess their meaning, despair had fill'd me with fear, and prevented me from defiring her to explain them. This, fays Mr. R—, I'll do myself; but then it must be upon a double supposition; first, that you really wish to marry my daughter; and fecondly, that your wife's infidelity, and her going away with another man, can be well prov'd. In this case, says he, it will be an easy matter to procure a divorce, and confequently be at liberty to marry again. The very same thing happen'd to my brother, and

ilia?

once,

died.

gno-

on

who

e of

fhe

and

in't

JOY

rith

ifs

ry,

ſs,

n;

te

id

10

and 'twas this Cecilia thought on, when she hinted a remedy. 'Tis true indeed, that neither the Roman laws or those of France allow of marrying a second wise, after a man has been divorc'd from his sirst; but our laws are different. All you have to do is, to address your self to the consistory of Charenton. Besides, being an Englishman, you therefore are not the king of France's subject; and in case this shou'dn't succeed, you may easily obtain a divorce in England, where that custom prevails very much. He added, that the only difficulty wou'd be, to get certain proofs of my wise's insidelity.

HERE, I want a new fet of expreffions, in order to describe one of the most odd situations that ever the heart of man was in. I am now going to relate an unparallel'd incident, which will fully perfuade my readers, that no man ever had a turn of mind like me. Can it be imagin'd, that loving miss Cecilia so dearly as I did; after the strongest wishes I had form'd to have her mine; and the deep pangs I felt when I thought it was impossible for her to be so; that I yet was capable of receiving this overture of Mr. R any otherwise than with the utmost acknowledgment, and the highest

coll

hav

cha

im

Th

R-dif

in

W

ar

n

highest transports of joy? What was There wanting to my heart, when every thing had been offer'd that cou'd poffibly make it happy? Hadn't I eraz'd my wife from my remembrance? Didn't I hate her? Was not the a perfidious creature, who had brought me to shame, and fill'd me with forrow; and therefore deferv'd nothing from me but hatred and contempt? However, the inftant I understood what Mr. R-was going to propose, I trembled in every limb. Every time I heard him utter the word divorce, I thought he tore my heart to pieces. 'Twas a bare fensation, abstracted from any idea, and I was struck dumb after he had spoke.

He then ask'd me what I thought of his proposal. This question drew me out of my lethargy, when I took his hand and squeez'd it, but without uttering a word. He imagin'd that this silence was the effect of my joy; and therefore continued to explain in what manner all difficulties might be remov'd. I had time to make several resections as he was speaking. I admir'd what I had just be fore selt; but what impression it might still have lest upon me, I endeavour'd to banish it entirely from my heart; by recollecting

7

Was

ery

my

t I

reand

ic-

nd

n-

d,

0

d

collecting the just abhorrence I ought to have of my wife's conduct. And then, I needed only but to paint mis Cecilia's charms in my fancy, and the delightful image immediately fill'd all my foul. Thither I directed all my attention. Mr. R—— having repeated, that the greatest difficulty would be, to get proofs of her incontinence; he ask'd me if I knew what was become of my faithless wife, and what I knew of her guilt? I anfwer'd, that the was retir'd to Chaillot under the dutches's protection; and that my whole family were ready to atteft, that she ran away with her gallant. 'Tis a happy circumstance, fays he, that she is so near us. You yourself must propose to her the separation; there's no doubt but she'll consent to it at once, and by that means matters will be fooner concluded. This last proposal fill'd me with the highest uneafiness; and thereupon I defir'd Mr. R- to do whatever he thought necessary, assuring him, (which indeed was not true) that I myself was wholly ignorant of the laws and the ordinary forms of justice.

I URGED him to return to our rural habitation in the park, which I was not so much prompted to from the necessity

L 6 I was

I was under of reposing myself, tho' I made this the excuse; as from my unwillinguess to hear a discourse, every word of which increas'd my pain. I rely, my good friend, fays I, on you; and therefore would have you act as you shall think proper. I thus endeavour'd to check, by vague and random ideas, the birth of a thousand afflicting reflections, which feem'd ready to fart up in my foul. I ran with the utmost haste into the room where miss Cecilia was, and feated myself by her. I sigh'd as I sat down, as though I had just escap'd some immiment danger; and was then just beginning to breathe, in a place where all my fears were to cease. And indeed, her presence restor'd joy to my heart, and her countenance discover'd that she herself was eafy. She did not doubt, when she saw me return with her father, but that I had at last been inform'd, of what she fo eagerly wish'd I shou'd know. She imagin'd my mind was easy, and her's was completely fo. Possibly 'twas the fame reason had prompted me, so contrary to my usual custom, to go and feat myself by her in so free a manner.

MR. R- fuppoling that Mrs. Laldin and my fifter were let into all our fe-

crets,

cre

the

gre

to

ma the

ab

H de

> 1 th

> > d

P

o' I

wil-

pord

my ere-

hall

to

the

ns,

ny

ed

n,

i-

g

rs

e

crets, refum'd the discourse we had held in the park. After having declar'd to his daughter before them, that I had a very great affection for her, and intended to fue for a divorce, and afterwards to marry her; he again began to speak of the methods how it might be best brought I now liftned to him with much less distraction than I had done before. He then offer'd to go to Chaillos; and to desire my wife to consent to our divorce. I approv'd every thing he faid, and thereupon he prepar'd to fet out imme-Mrs. Lallin and my lifter were prodigiously surpriz'd at so unexpected an adventure. I observ'd that they gaz'd upon me with aftonishment. They had, perhaps, perceiv'd, that I had a passion for miss Cecilia; but they never could have thought that it would have increas'd to fuch a degree, or have produced fuch an effect as they had just heard it had done. Nevertheless, they seem'd vastly delighted upon that account, because they were persuaded I was now at ease, a circumstance they 'till now despair'd of; and thereupon lavish'd their caresses upon miss Cecilia, whom they suppos'd had wholly produced this happy change. We spent the afternoon very agreeably,

the

con

but

per

her

I

1

'till Mr. R—'s return; and I was so overjoy'd at my being with miss Cecilia, that I thought but very little on the business her father was gone about. He came back, and discover'd the greatest joy and satisfaction in his countenance; and I my self continued in the highest transports for some moments.

EVERY one was mighty eager to know what success he had met with, especially Mrs. Lallin and my fifter, who did not know, 'till then, that my wife was fo nearus, and that I knew the place of her abode. He then told us all that had past between my wife and himself. He at first had enquir'd for her at the convent-gate, by the name of Mrs. Cleveland, which I told him was mine, just as he set out for Chaillot. Mr. R- was answer'd that there was no person of that name there. And indeed my wife had changed hers, in order to prevent her being known; it happen'd by a very odd turn of chance, that the new name she had taken, was almost the same with mine, which was Kingsby and hers Ringsby. Mr. Rfound it a very difficult matter to point out the person he wanted, there being a great number of boarders in that house; and would have come to no purpole, hadn't

lo ilia,

ufi-

me

and ny

rts

ly

ot

r

t

hadn't he ask'd for an English lady, whom the dutchess had recommended to that convent. By this means she was known; but when word was brought her, that a person at the gate desired to speak with her, she had sent word, that she didn't receive any visits; so that Mr. R—— was oblig'd to declare several times, that he came upon business of the greatest consequence, and therefore he must see her.

ALTHO' there was not any thing very affecting in this preamble, I yet cou'dn't hear it without being mov'd. Poffibly I might have been less so, had Mr. R--- come at once to the chief end of his commission. But now a look I cast upon miss Cecilia recover'd me, and I continued to liften.—At last, says Mr. R ...., your spouse was prevail'd on to come: I then was brought into a closet, and a moment after I saw her appear at the grate. She was dress'd in deep mourning; and appear'd with fo sweet. so modest an air, that I cou'd not help making a reflection, on the treachery and injustice of nature; who frequently conceals a vicious foul, under the most specious appearances of virtue. Mrs. Cleveland ask'd me with a fearful tone of voice, what I wanted with her. I anfwer'd,

ing

wha

lear

out

wh

CO

m

p

el

fwer'd, that I came from you, which immediately brought a colour into her cheeks. Observing this I gave her time to recover herfelf, when I deliver'd my message in the civilest terms I possibly cou'd. Hearing this she turn'd her eyes towards heaven; afterwards kept them thut for fome time; then figh'd and burst into tears; and at last, after I began to be uneasy at her filence, she ask'd me whether I knew the woman you intended to marry. I anfwer'd that I did. So do I, fir, fays she, the tears streaming afresh down her cheeks; fo do I. Tell therefore Mr. Cleveland. that I wish he may live more happily with her, than he has done with me: Tell him, that I shall beg this earnestly of heaven. And fince my confent only is wanting to make him happy, affure him that he has it; and only remind him, that I never in my life oppos'd his happiness .- I answer'd, continued Mr. R -, that you would undoubtedly be highly pleas'd to hear she was fo pliable; and that knowing your good nature, I didn't scruple to assure her in your name, that you forgave her all that was past. She then was going to leave me; but I told her, you defired fhe would give her confent in writing. This she did not scruple to do; and calling

ing for pen, ink and paper, she writ whatever I thought sit to dictate. Here, says he, is the instrument sign'd by her.

After she had done, I took my leave of her in a very polite manner, with-

out faying a word more.

h im-

eeks.

OVEL

n the

ring

ren;

me;

at

her

the

an-

he,

S;

d,

h

1,

0

I TOOK the instrument into my hand, which trembled at the same time. I yet cou'd not tell what it was that agitated me in this manner, I being almost depriv'd of my reason, and could hardly either fee or hear. I then turn'd my eyes towards miss Cecilia, I perceiv'd her; but, as tho' my heart was oppress'd on a sudden, I did not feel the secret charm, which the least glance from her eyes used to awake in my heart. A rock would not have felt so heavy on my bosom, as the dead weight with which it feem'd to be then loaded. I could not fetch my breath; I don't know, fays I turning about to my fifter, what's the matter with me, I am ready to faint away. Immediately they ran to fetch fomething, and miss Cecilia was preparing to give it me; when taking up her hand eagerly, I applied it to my lips, and cry'd with a deep figh, alas! dear Fanny! -- I undoubtedly intended to fay, dear Cecilia! but my imagination was fo diffurb'd, that

it represented every thing in a confus'd manner. I continued in a kind of diffraction for some time, but by the care of those about me, I at last recover'd from it.

THE whole company continued filent, and feem'd to look upon me with aftonishment, especially Mr. R. I was wastly so myself, when being recovered. I

nishment, especially Mr. R. ....... I was wastly so myself, when being recover'd, I recollected what had just before happen'd. I fancied myself just come out of a dream; and reflecting a moment more on what it was that could possibly occasion so great a change in me; I was forced to own to myself, that I did not yet know my own Tho' I was recover'd from the kind of fwoon into which I was fallen, nevertheless, I still felt a great weight at my stomach. I struggled with myself when I consider'd the ill effects this accident might produce. Mr. Rtinued to look stedfastly at me, but without speaking a word; nor was miss Cecilia less surpriz'd. At last, words forced their way from me, when delivering my felf with my usual freedom, I vented a deep figh. Alas! fays I; I am as much furpriz'd at what has just now happen'd to me, as you can possibly be. I lov'd my faithless partner with such a passion

25

15 IS

you

white

ing

the

mo

T

nfus"d

of di-

care

ver'd

lent,

was

n'd.

m;

har

to

Wn

he n,

at If as is beyond the power of words. What you have now feen in me, must owe its birth to some dying remains of affection which I still entertain for her. But dear friend, and lovely Cecilia, says I, directing myself to both father and daughter at the same time; this will give you but a more favourable idea of my heart, which, sure, is the most tender that ever man was informed with. You both know the great ascendant you have over it. You perceive in what manner I hate; judge from thence how strong my love must be!

They receiv'd my excuses in the kindest manner, and I did not perceive that their affection was lessen'd. I likewise assum'd my usual behaviour, and fell to carefling mis Cecilia, when her lovely eyes awak'd all my tenderness. I then read the instrument my wife had sign'd, before her. Tho' the fight of her name written by herfelf, occasion'd a furprizing revolution in all my faculties, I yet had the power to prevent any notice being taken of it. We then thought of proper methods for compleating what was then began. Mr. R——— undertook to present a petition from me to the confistory. He told me, that if we met with no more difficulty,

ima

cun

R-

my

lf

wh

ftra

the

me

m

I

fo

kr

aF

Ci

e

than his brother had done in an affair of the fame nature, he didn't doubt but I should be his fon-in-law, in less than a fortnight; and we refolv'd, that in case we should meet with any obstacle from the confistory, we then would go for England forthwith. One thing we were afraid of, viz. that the jesuit would set every engine at work to prevent our escape; but this we were forced to run the hazard of. 'Tis impossible for a whole family to leave a kingdom in one night, and carry off all their effects. 'Twas enough, in the present occasion, that I had depriv'd my enemies of the only reasonable handle they could make use of, in order to deprive me of my liberty. 'Twas very plain that I intended to marry miss Cecilia; so that I cou'dn't be accus'd of having shelter'd her in my house, merely to favour herefy, in oppofition to his majesty's edicts.

I was highly satisfied with this disposition of matters, and spent the rest of the day in Cecilia's company, with the utmost satisfaction. Nevertheless, there was something very mysterious in my heart which I cou'dn't unravel; and I sound its perplexity increase, when I prepar'd myself to take some rest. The image air of

but I

nan a

cafe

from

Eng-

re a-

fet

our

run

r 3

one

cts.

on,

the

ke

li-

ed

1't

14

0-

f

e

e

7

mage of my wife, and the feveral circumstances of her discourse with Mr. R— painted themselves so strongly in my fancy, that I could not banish them. I spent part of the night, in endeavouring to drive away those melancholy ideas, which were fit only to fill me with difraction. I avoided even fearthing into the foundation of my thoughts, for fear of meeting with fomething in them, which my reason would force me to disapprove. I differ'd fo much from what I was before; that instead of endeavouring to know myself, at a time when every thing appear'd dark within, and around me, I dreaded nothing fo much as the pains and confusion of such an enquiry. In case any antient philosophical lights darted upon my foul, I immediately chased them away, for this reason, viz. because I had prov'd their inefficacy. With regard to my wife, I was surpriz'd that her name and the remembrance of her, were capable of giving me fo much uneafiness; but then I also rejected with obstinacy, whatever tended to make me think favourably of her. What I an ungrateful, a perfidious, and infamous creature! No, no; the is now to expect nothing from me but hatred and horror. All my tenderness

my h

at the

force

enfa

mere

was

of n

at O

fidel

Ceci

fcale

deri

in i

my

Yd

tho

ver

me

tri

Ia

he

derness is reserved for my amiable Cecilia. She has heal'd my heart, and brought tranquillity to my soul; I therefore owe myself wholly to her charms. In this manner did I go to sleep, deluded by this idea of tranquillity, which I was far from possessing; and indeed my slumbers were far from peaceful, and I had a dream which will be eternally fix'd in my memory.

THE vision presented my wife and mis Cecilia at one and the same time to my fancy. The former in the mourning weeds in which Mr. R-had described her, but more lovely and charming, than ever she had before appear'd; with that air of sadness, which I was told she wore at Chaillot. On the other fide, Cecilia rose before me, with all her native graces and sprightliness. I fancied myself leated, and that they both were standing before me. Their glances were upon me, and fix'd me, as it were, to my chair, notwithstanding all the endeavours I used to rise up from it. My eyes wander'd over them both, with inexpressible avidity, as attracted by two objects which my heart panted to have united. Nevertheless, every glance excited a different emotion in my foul. The languishing and afflicted air with which my wife appear d, damp'd

ilia

ghie

owe

an-

dea

-loc

far

ich

nd

to

ng

d

an

at

re

ia

CS

ı,

5

d

)

5

[]

my heart in a furprizing manner; while at the same time, Cecilia's sprightly and delightful air, had almost the power to force a smile from me; but altho' a: mile is always the effect of a pleasant infation, I yet found that mine was merely superficial; and that my heart was afflicted at the bottom. This frame of mind was vaftly painful to me. My delires were attracted two different ways at one and the same time. My wife's infidelity did not occur to me; for then, Ceilia would undoubtedly have turn'd the I faw nothing but two amiable objects, which claim'd an equal share of tenderness, and raised the strongest emotions in my foul. In fine, I imagin'd I faw my two children leading their mother in by the hand; and as the drew nearer, methoughts she took up that part of my heart which Cecilia had fill'd before. Nevertheless, there was something bitter in the pleasure I felt, in finding her so near; me. Even the very instant that I was going to embrace her, I fancied I faw tears trickle down her cheeks, and mine alfo. lawak'd, when I did not taste that gentle latisfaction, which remains in the heart, after a man has feen in flumbers, what he dotes formuch upon when awake; for far

La

of

fhe

cha

and

fea

ho

at

gr

th

an

N

bo

CI

e

tl

n

t

1

t

t

far from it, that I never rose with so much heaviness upon my spirits. I dress'd my self as fast as I could; and avoiding even to revive this importunate illusion in my imagination, I hasted to my Cecilia, in order to dispel the gloom which hung

over my spirits.

But these moments of sorrow, were nothing in comparison of what I was to fuffer a little after. It was usual for Mrs. Lallin and my fifter to give my neice and the children an airing in the coach, and afterwards walk in the delightful solitude about St. Cloud. custom they had discontinued ever since miss Cecilia had been with us, they never stirring from her. However, they determin'd to go and amuse themselves after the same manner, the very day after Mr. R——— had been with my wife. They did not tell me the reason of their going abroad, which I suppos'd was merely because they were weary of the house. They left my niece with miss Cecilia; and taking my two fons, they told me they were going to take the air for a few hours. Their delign in this was, in order to get a fight of my wife at Chaillot. They did not intend either to enquire for her at the gate, or make her a visit, but Mrs. Lallin

uch my ven my

in

to for my

dehis

er le-

r. y

y

s. t

t .

Lallin being acquainted with the customs of convents, had assur'd my sister, that she wou'd not of fail seeing her in chapel, when the nuns chaunt vespers; and all she design'd was, to examine her seatures a little.

IT was pretty late when they return'd home. Altho' the fair-fex disguise their thoughts better than men; I yet discover'd at their coming in, that they were chagrin'd; and thereupon I ask'd them whether any thing had vex'd them. They answer'd, with coldness, that nothing had. Nevertheless, as I still kept my eyes upon them, I plainly perceiv'd that they were both deeply afflicted. I did not carry my curiofity any farther; but happening to meet with both my children, I faw their eyes were bath'd in tears. I then examin'd them together and apart, but found them perfift obstinately in refusing to tell me any thing. Tho' I did not yet suspect the truth of this matter, I yet judg'd that fomething had happen'd which I ought to know. Accordingly, taking my fifterin-law aside; I am surpriz'd, says I, that you should scruple to tell me what has happen'd to you. You shall never perfuade me that the children cry for nothing; or even that I mistook when VOL. IV. I ob-M

la

fc

fo

ti

no

y

ch

It

th

ou

fac

on

vag

gin

ma

hea

WO

whi

Wit

she

Wer

WOL

the

tatio

I observ'd some change in yours and Mrs. Lallin's countenance. I am absolutely resolv'd to know what it is that troubles you.—She did not know what to do for some time; but as I still continued to urge her very much, she at last made the

following confession.

You force me, fays she, to relate, what will touch and affect you as much as it did us. Alas! I shall never forget what I have feen. You are to know then, that instead of taking an airing in the country, curiofity prompted us to go to Chaillot. We arriv'd there just as the nuns were at vespers. We went into chapel in order to get a fight of your spouse, and accordingly we faw her. She was upon her knees, in a mourning habit, as Mr. R had described her yesterday. I knew her, tho' she had her back to me. I did not intend to let her fee us, much less did I desire that the children should. However, I could not help staying 'till she turn'd her head to us; defigning, as foon as I had feen her face, to go away. We stood at the grate, which divides the choir from the nave or body of the chapel; and consequently, as she was at the other end of the choir, we were at a confiderable diffance from her. At .laft

rs.

e-

es

ob

to

he

e,

ch

et

n,

ne

to

ne

a-

e,

as

as

r-

k

ee

il-

lp

e-

to

ch

ly

ne

re

At

ift

an

last she turn'd her head; however, I scarce believe that she knew us at first; for altho' she discover'd some little emotion in her countenance, the yet feem'd not to know us. I was then going to lead your two fons out haftily, but the poor children knew their unfortunate mother. It would be impossible for me to describe the transports with which they were going to fly to her; not confidering that the grate prevented them from doing this. Their cries, or rather groans echoed thro' the whole chapel. They thrust their arms thro' the grate; and would have call'd out upon their mother, but had loft the faculty of speech; so that they broke only into a tender and confus'd murmur, which must have soften'd the most favage hearts; but this was only the beginning of the melancholy scene. You may eafily believe that their mother foon heard them. But 'tis not in the power of words to describe the impetuosity with which she slew towards them. She ran with open arms, not confidering the place the was in, or the persons; and so strong were her transports, that I was afraid she would have dash'd herself to pieces against the grate. However, these violent agitations having exhausted all her spirits in

M 2

an instant, she fainted in the middle of the choir. This frighted all the nuns, who immediately came up and gave her all the assistance possible. While she lay in the swoon, I endeavour'd to get the two children out of the chapel, but there was no making them stir. Their tears gush'd like rivulets from their cheeks, when they saw their mother lying on the ground; and they still continued to stretch out their arms, and strive with all their might to get thro' the grate; so that, at last, the youngest

fainted away at my feet. This relation pierc'd my very heart. I was standing up, when I desir'd my fifter to let me take a little breath and fet down a little. She then went on. Mrs. Lallin then had the child carried into the open air, in order that he might revive. As for me, I didn't stir from the eldest, who I expected would also fall in a swoon; however, he did not. Your spouse being at last revived by the care and assistance of the nuns, she desir'd to be carried to the grate. 'Tis here you'd have melted, to fee and hear the child and his mother, As they could not embrace one another, their mouths feem'd glued to the grate that was between them; and they repeated with a

most

m

na

af

he

he

fo

ir

f

Is

n

n

f

11

of

ins,

her

she

get

out

eir

eir

ly-

n-

nd

ro'

est

rt.

ny

et

rs.

he

S

10

;

e

le

0

r

most passionate tone of voice, the tender names of mother and fon. Your spouse afterwards took her child's hands, and kis'd them a thousand times, bedewing them with her tears. As she didn't fee her other fon, she enquir'd very eagerly what was become of him; when I told her that he was out of order, and therefore had been carried into the air. Hearing my voice, she found that she was speaking to me. Alas! fifter, says she; Is it you I fee and speak to? How infinitely I am oblig'd to you for bringing my two children! Does friendship still infpire you with compassion for a wretched woman? Seeing all the nuns about her, notwithstanding the confusion she was in, the nevertheless had the presence of mind. to confider, that perhaps fome words might flip from me thro' inadvertency, which it was not proper for the nuns to hear; fo that without giving me time to speak, she desir'd me to retire with her children into a room; where, she faid, the would come to me immediately.

I was in doubt, continued my fifter, whether I should indulge her this small favour; 'twas not but I was deeply afflicted to see her take on so much, but I recollected that I was in a convent; that

M 3

'tis

tis a kind of prison in which your two fons might, perhaps, be shut up; in fine, that it was necessary I should use the utmost precautions. I answer'd, that I was oblig'd to leave the convent immediately; that I didn't dare to stay in Chaillet without I had your permission for that purpose; and that I would defire your leave, to visit her another time. What! fays she with a flood of tears: you refuse to give me a moment's hearing! you won't indulge me the fatisfaction of embracing my children? Undoubtedly my husband must have forc'd you to be thus cruel; for alas! what harm did I ever do you, and why should you hate me? On the other fide, your ion begg'd me so earnestly to acquiesce with her defires, that I was upon the point of yielding. While this was doing, Mrs. Lallin came back with your fon Tommy: When your spouse had no sooner set eyes upon that lady, but she fell again into a swoon. The nuns seeing the confufion this made in the church, remov'd her instantly, in order to assist her in another place. One of these entreated me to retire into a little room, where I might discourse her in private. However, the fear I was under of displeasing you, and

to

to t

boy

to

wit

chi

to

hu

CC

CC

to

WO

in

ıfe

d,

nt

in

or

re

to expose the children to the danger above-mention'd, prompted me to get into the coach, and return home forthwith. I cou'd hardly prevail with the children to come away with me, they being absolutely determin'd to stay with their mother: infomuch that I was oblig'd to threaten them I would tell you of it; but this not working upon their minds, I made the footmen force 'em-into the coach. To comfort them, I promis'd to come fome other time with them to Chaillot; and strictly enjoin'd them not to acquaint you with what happen'd. Your footmen observ'd, says she, a man, but who he is they knew not, ride hard. after us. He, at first, came upon a fullgallop; but when he was got near enough. to know the coach, he follow'd it foftly and turn'd back his horse, as soon as we were got into the house.

My fifter look'd stedsaftly upon me, as she ended her relation, in expectation of hearing me speak. I must own to you, says I, that I am prodigiously affected with what I have now heard. I know not whether it be love or compassion; but 'tis certain there is something in my heart, which still combats in my guilty wise's savour. Alas! how wretched

M 4

is my fate! fays I, with a deep figh. Most men are oblig'd to struggle with themselves, in order to preserve their affection for their wives, after they have been married but a few months; whereas, I am oblig'd to maintain a perpetual war in my own bosom, and yet cannot forget an infamous woman who has cover'd me with shame; and whom I ought to hate for a thousand reasons! I didn't think, fays my fifter, your case so deplorable; but fancied we were more obliged to mis Cecilia, whose charms, we suppos'd, had dispell'd your melancholy. I won't, tays I, deny but that she is dear to me; and this you cannot doubt of, fince I intend to marry her. She has fometimes exhibited fuch transports in my bosom, as, methoughts, I never felt before; but I must confess to you, that I am not able to describe what I feel. Figure to your felf a man who being loft, as it were, endeavours to recover himself, but cannot flatter himself with the hopes that he ever shall; and who fixes, thro' despair, upon every thing that fooths his affliction.

This is the fad image of me. I have now, fifter, fays I, unbosom'd myself more to you, than I have done to any other person. Nature inform'd me with

too

A. A. Rose

toe

tha

fho

tir

h.

th

ıfve

IS,

ar

et

te

)

too tender a heart. The greatest evil that cou'd possibly have befallen me, was the losing what I lov'd. Perhaps, I should have consol'd myself by the same reason which made me lose her; had I been capable, at the same time, of extinguishing the passion I have for her: but it still burns in my bosom; tho, what is a most cruel torment, I no longer possess the object of it. I languish'd for a long time, in the most violent agitations of forrows, the extremes of which you are utterly a stranger to. This excess ought naturally to have lasted so long as life itself; and yet it lessen'd the moment I began to love Cecilia. You are fenfible that the is a charming creature; and, indeed, I was fuddenly ftruck with her. My heart, as I observ'd to you before, was form'd for tenderness; it was inflam'd with her perfections; and the return she indulg'd me of her love, increas'd mine to a prodigious degree. But in case I judge of all I have felt hitherto for her, by what I feel the inftant I am speaking to you, and by the perplexity you saw me in yesterday; I am obliged to confess, that I love her but very little; and that the paffion which inclines me to marry her, is not suggested by me, but by Mr

by another. I don't doubt but what I now fay will appear dark to you: however, don't desire me to explain myself farther, for this would fill me with the utmost shame and confusion. I even endeavour to divert my eyes from turning themselves inward. I cannot, nor will

not know myfelf.

My fifter was a woman of very good fense. She perceiv'd that I perhaps was going to be replung'd in my former forrow, and consequently stood in need of a fupport. This made her make fuch an answer as I was far from expecting, after she had told me the abovemention'd particulars of my wife. I guess, says she, part of what you explain in fo mysterious a manner; but continued to obferve, that what affection foever I might still have for my wife, as her crime was of fuch a nature, as would not fuffer me to indulge the least hopes of our ever being reconciled, her opinion was, in case I thought fit to hear it; that I ought to make my court to miss Cecilia more affiduously than ever, and not oppose the tender inclinations I had for her; that it matter'd not what it was that gave rife to my foft fensations, since they were directed to a worthy object, and prov'd an agreeable

fer too my cit

agr

th

no of

welf

he

1-

agreeable amusement; that she had observed a fault in me, viz. that I refin'd too much on the nature and principle of my impulses; that a little more simplicity, and less argumentation were necesfary, in order to make myself happy; that she hadn't approv'd any thing I had faid so much, as the resolution I had taken not to fludy my own mind fo much as I had done; that the uneafiness I complain'd of, was owing to my reflections, rather than to the natural disposition of my heart; and after all, that she did not think my present circumstances so very unhappy: that, indeed, I had lost a wife whom I lov'd to distraction; but then, that 'twas a great happiness I had rid myself of her, fince she was so unworthy of my esteem; that I was very happy in being fo dear to miss Cecilia; that therefore I ought to think of her only; and be affur'd, that all my past afflictions would be remov'd, when once I was posses'd of Cecilia, especially when we were got safe to England. Altho' I approv'd part of this advice, and was refolv'd to follow it, it yet was not capable of charming my anxiety. At her leaving me, she ask'd whether I should approve of her going to Chaillet again? I answer'd, that the might do as the pleas'd.

THE next day in the afternoon, word was brought me that a clergyman was in the parlour, who enquir'd for me by the name of Cleveland. Altho' I was furpriz'd to hear a person ask for me by that name, I yet order'd him to be brought in. He told me that he was chaplain to the convent of Chaillet; and that my wife having experienc'd his probity and discretion, had not scrupled to let him into our whole ftory; that she had begg'd him to conjure me, by all that was holy, to let her have the fatisfaction of feeing and embracing her children; that she might, indeed, cease to be my wife, but that it was impossible for her not to be their mother; that she waited with inexpressible eagerness to see them, that she wish'd I might be as happy with my bride, as I cou'd wish to be, and that she wou'd do all that ever lay in her power to promote my felicity; that in consequence of this she would never trouble me by her presence or reproaches; but that, in return for the implicit fubmission I had always paid to my will, fhe begg'd me upon her knees, not to deny her the fatisfaction of feeing her two children. That as for her having ask'd for me by the name of Cleve-

ed aft wh Br

lan

no fl

n

land, this ought not to give me the least uneasmess; that my wife having appointed a person to follow my coach, a little after the was recover'd from her swoon. which had prevented her from asking Mrs. Bridge where I liv'd; the footman whom the fent after us, had told it her; but not knowing I had chang'd my name, fhe therefore had me enquir'd for by my real one; and that he had not heard any where but in my own parlour, that I did not care to pass for Oliver's son, a circumstance he promis'd not to reveal to

any person.

td

in he

r-

y

36 O

y

AFTER he had ended this discourse. in the most polite and affable manner, he affum'd a graver air; and as his words had struck me so far, that I was oblig'd to meditate a moment, on the answer it would be proper for me to make him; he had time to anticipate it. This, fir, fays he, is what your wife defir'd me to tell you: I have only repeated her own words, purfuant to the urgent orders she gave me. But now I have declared her defire, give me leave to explain myself with the liberty, which the character I am invested with allows me. Cou'd one possibly believe, that so wife, fo good natur'd a man as you have always appear'd to be, according even to your wife's

fro

in dif

wh

yo

wife's description, could have taken so unaccountable a resolution, as that you are going to execute ? I am sensible that a man of good fense may sometimes be deluded by an irregular paffion; and may for some time swerve from his duty. But then, to pass all bounds; to break the most facred of all tyes; to renounce all virtue and justice, is what can never be perpetrated but by a man whose heart is corrupted very much; and confequently all this in a man of your character is incomprehenfible. I know you only, as I before observ'd, from the character which your lady gave me of you. I find, that notwithstanding the just reason she has to complain of you, she yet does justice to your merit. I am justly persuaded that you are a very deferving gentleman; the testimony she gives you, is the highest panegyric on you both. But what use do you make of it? Where is your good nature, when you abandon a woman that adores you; and whose excellent sense, virtue, mildness, heighten'd by a thousand natural graces, ought to have bound you eternally to her? Where is your wisdom and judgment, when you prefer a woman to her, who has no other merit but what your passion bestows upon her? This I judge

from my own eyes. I saw her yesterday in Chaillot. Heavens! how wide is the difference between her, and the person for whom you abandon her? In fine, what honour have you, when, notwithstanding your good sense, you yet make your self a slave to a shameful passion, and expose yourself to the raillery of all who

know you?

I was for interrupting this injurious harangue, which appear'd to me equally irrational and impolite. But he went on with the same warmth.--But a moment or two more, fir, fays he, I have but a word or two to fay; and as 'tis not probable, that I shall have an opportunity of feeing you often, I shall enjoy this satisfaction, viz. that I have done my duty; and left fuch hints with you, as are worthy of being confider'd. Hitherto, I have only taken notice of fuch particulars in your conduct, as are repugnant to reason and moral honesty; but d'ye think it does not interfere equally with conscience and religion? By what right, and upon what pretence, do you think to dissolve the holy tyes of marriage? I don't know what religion you profess; but are the laws of any so detestable, to authorize the violation of an oath, when your wife has kept strictly to hers?

abf

me

to

bu

ra: N

W

to

er

0

hers? I am fensible that she was so weak as to fign an instrument of divorce, which I told her she ought not to have done. The only answer, she made, was, that she did it in consequence of the refolution she had made, to prove to you, fo long as the lives (by her obedience and fubmission) that she doesn't deserve the treatment she has met with from you. 'Tis plain, that this excess of good nature does not justify her. But you are infinitely more unjust, for thus prefuming to plunge yourfelf into guilt, without the least shadow of reason, except it be that of a wild, abominable passion. This, fir, added he, is what I thought myself oblig'd to tell you for Mrs. Cleveland's fake; and as we are alone, I imagin'd it wou'dn't be impertinence in me. I have, indeed, deliver'd myfelf with the utmost freedom, and wish it may produce a happy effect. All that remains, is, for you to acquaint me with your will and pleafure, with regard to the principal affair which engag'd me to trouble you with a vifit.

Notwithstanding I was highly shock'd at what he said; and that considering how affairs stood between my wife and me, it was natural for me to look upon all he had spoke, as very injurious and absurd:

といっちい

abfurd: I nevertheless should have argued upon several particulars he had mention'd to me, had they been utter'd to me by any person but an ecclesiastic: but the remembrance of what had fo lately past between myself and the jesuit, raised the strongest suspicions in my mind. Notwithstanding my perplexity, I yet was fo much mafter of my temper, as to content myself with answering the chaplain, that I would pardon him for employing fo many invectives; that in case he was so much in my wife's confidence, as he declar'd himself to be; he ought to accuse her for having given him but a very imperfect account of matters, which confequently fhew'd but little esteem and confidence; that in case she would open herfelf more, she cou'd inform him of fuch circumstances, as wou'd very much leffen what he call'd his zeal; and plainly shew him that my conduct was more honourable, rational and religious than he suppos'd it to be. the request with regard to my children, I promis'd to fend them fometimes to Chaillot; not being fo unreasonable, as to deny them the fatisfaction of feeing their mother fometimes. He defir'd the favour to fee and embrace them, in the name of the person who had sent him, which I immediately granted.

ty!

wife

of

mo

WO

tha

By

wa

fin

ing

th

uf

T

no

fi

IT was impossible for me to banish the reflections which occur'd after he was gone. I recollected, involuntarily as it were, the most infignificant expression in his discourse and my answers. point I imagin'd I had clearly discover'd, among the feveral obscure reproaches he had made me, was, the character of the lady I intended to marry. I did not doubt but this woman, whose merit he declar'd to be so vastly inferior to that of my wife; and whom he faid he had feen at Chaillot, was Mrs. Lallin, who, in all probability, my wife imagin'd I was going to marry. I cou'dn't but smile at the mistake. But as what the chaplainadded afterwards was a mystery to me, all I concluded, was, that this was wholly an artifice of my wife's; who, in order to preserve her reputation in the convent, endeavour'd to disguise her ill conduct, and to throw the whole blame of our feparation upon me. 'Tho' 'twas but natural that she should act in this manner, after having been fo vile as I suppos'd her, I yet was highly offended with her upon that account. However, this reflection lessen'd the uneafiness I before felt upon my wife's account. What lengths, would I say to myself, won't that woman. go, who has violated her conjugal fidelihe

as

it

in

ly i,

le

e

ty! One crime draws many after it. My wife was upright, fincere, and incapable of diffembling; and now she is the very reverse. She has dishonour'd herself in a most scandalous manner, and yet she would be look'd upon as innocent. Perfidious woman! who could have believ'd that fo vile a heart lodg'd in thy breast! By what indications shall we henceforward know, that a woman is modest, fincere, tender and virtuous? After having made these reflections, I return'd to the park, in order to footh my mind as usual, in the company of dear Cecilia. The impression I still retain'd of what: now happen'd, made me vent a deep figh as I enter'd the room where she was. That amiable creature undoubtedly faw into the tumults of my foul, and in all probability guess'd the cause of them; but then she was convinced that I lov'd her dearly, and the herfelf was passionately fond of me. She receiv'd me as an endearing, but fick lover, who stood in need of her tenderness and indulgence. She would fometimes look upon me with a troubled and languishing air; on which, occasion I could read in her eyes, all the tender impulses of her foul; and strengthened, in some measure, by the testimony the gave of her compassion, I thank'd

her kindly for it, as being so well adapted to check the violence of my disease.

bu

WHILE these things were doing, Mr. R-was labouring incessantly to procure a divorce for me. This he had propos'd to the confistory at Charenton; and notwithstanding the protestants were treated with fo much feverity in France, as to be daily disposses'd of one or more of their privileges; he yet had found fo much credit with the elders, as to prevail. over their fears, and make them confent to receive my petition. The day was even appointed, for receiving the depositions of the witnesses. My fister-in-law, her daughter, Mrs. Lallin, and my head fervants, were to be examin'd by the commissioners; and after such unanimous and positive depositions, it was suppos'd that a divorce wou'd be immediately 'Twas undoubtedly heaven granted. which put a stop to this blind project, at a time when one would have imagin'd, nothing could have prevented its being put in execution. I myself wish'd to have it foon ended; not but that I was always tortur'd with uneafineffes and fears, which a person of a fearful mind wou'd, perhaps, have look'd upon as fo many bad omens; but I was perfuaded, agreeable to my fifter's motion, that nothing could dispel the gloom

ed

r.

0-

0-

bi

re

es

e

0

il.

t

gloom with which my mind was clouded, but my marriage with Cecilia. Besides, her charms continued to have the same power on my foul; or that in case, as I had observ'd to my sister, it were possible this lovely creature had not inspir'd me with love; I yet was sensible to all

the transports of a genuine passion.

But now the day appointed by the confiftory for hearing the depositions of the feveral witnesses was come. morning of this fatal day, word was brought me, that a canon of St. Cloud, whosename was Audiger, with whom I was a little acquainted, desir'd very earnestly to speak with me; and that he had an unknown person along with him, who appear'd to be no less urgent to see me. I was alone in my room, fitting on a couch, where I was revolving with forrow the feveral particulars which were to be transacted that afternoon; and this reflection having increas'd my habitual melancholy, ever fince the morning; I order'd my fervants to deny me to every Nevertheless, having some respect for Mr. Audiger, he being a man of excellent sense, and a person of great merit; I bid the servant introduce him to me inthe room where I then was. Accordingly he was brought in with the unknown

unknown person. Excuse, sir, says he to me, my being so troublesome; I should not have infifted upon feeing you, after I found by some words that your servant dropt, that you were determin'd not to have any person admitted to you; but I had promised, at the request of an intimate friend of mine, to introduce this gentleman to you, who has affairs of very great consequence to communicate to you; I then defir'd them to fit down. when I call'd to mind, that I had feen this stranger somewhere: but a handkerchief which he held before his mouth. as tho' he had got the tooth-ach; and a large perriwig which hid a great part of his face, prevented me from immediately recollecting who he was. Besides, I should have been equally aftonish'd, had he not difguis'd himself in this manner; and cou'd scarce have believ'd, that a wretch whom I suppos'd to be dead; and who, for a thousand reasons, ought to have shunn'd my presence in case he were living; cou'd appear before me with fo much feeming tranquillity of mind, at a time when I so little expected him.

As foon as he was feated, he discover'd his face to me, when I presently knew him. Nevertheless, the improbability of his being the person I took him for;

nd

an

hi

fu.

wh

or

fta

in

fo

an

W

ro lu

do

la

no

W

av

th

ha

ed

to

to

ıld

rI

nt

to

I

i-

is

of

te

1,

n

,

and the vast surprize which the sight of him threw me into, made me still doubtful for a moment. A thousand tumultuous emotions were rifing in my foul, when he himself declared who he was. Your eyes, fays he to me in English (in order that the canon might not underfland him) were not mistaken; I am Gelin. I difguis'd myfelf in this manner, in order to get myself introduc'd to you, undiscover'd by your family. I beg therefore that we may talk matters over calmly; and in case you are a man of honour, you won't fuffer me to be infulted under your roof. You hate me, fays he, with a refolute tone of voice; a circumstance I don't wonder at; for I have done all that lay in my power to incur your harred; and, indeed, I am not come hither with a design of suing for your friendship; I now appear before you, only to complete the measure of my iniquity. I seduced your wife; murther'd your brother my good friend; and am now resolv'd either to take away your life, or lose my own; and therefore enjoin you to meet me fword in hand, and to appoint the time and place.

THESE furious words check'd the marks of aftonishment, which I undoubtedly discover'd when he first appear'd before me; but now I was so strongly en-

flam'd

DOE

hat

WO

eye

anc

ho nit

cri

efc

fer

WO

at .

noi

nai

kn

abo

wh

wit

vai

pai

wa

ty

wa

ger

me

orc

arn

fib

fuf

mi

flam'd with rage, that I was going to rush from my feat, and punish him for his abominable crimes. Nevertheless, after a moment's reflection, I consider'd that as I was unarm'd, I very easily might come off by the worst. Nor was there need of deliberating on his challenge, for neither honour or reason would permit of my accepting it; and I consider'd that I ought to deliver him into the hands of the magistrate, whose business it was to punish him for his horrid villany. All the difficulty, was, how to get this infamous wretch feiz'd; for I did not doubt but he had pistols about him for his own fecurity, besides a long sword which he feem'd to wear merely for show sake. I continu'd filent for fome moments, revolving how I might best seize upon him; and confidering what could be the reason why he should defire to take away my life. His impatient fury discover'd itself in all his motions; when he urged me to give him an answer; advising me, with malicious raillery, to accept of his challenge, both for my own fecurity and honour. At last I was determin'd; and how greatly foever I might always abhor artifice, I yet refolv'd to make use of it upon this occasion. I told him, in order that he might explain himself farther, that I cou'd

th

his

ter

iat

ht

ere

or

of

tI

of

to

All

fa-

bt

Vn

he

n-

ng

nd

hy

nis

m

li-

e,

ır.

it-

I

nis

he

d

ot

not think of any reason he cou'd have to hate me, and that any other man but he, would have look'd upon me with another eye, after the high injury he had done me, and the many favours I had indulg'd him; however, that I accepted of the opportunity he gave me of punishing all his crimes; and that I would not fuffer him to escape; but that in order to keep my servants from suspecting any thing; it would be necessary for us, as he had desir'd at his coming in, not to make the least noise, but to assume an unrustled countenance. I ask'd him whether Mr. Audiger knew any thing of the business he was come about! he affur'd me he did not, upon which I invited them both to breakfast with me, and they accepted of my invitation.

I THEREUPON call'd one of my fervants, whom I immediately order'd to prepare breakfast, I had advanc'd so far towards the door, that I had an opportunity of whispering to my servant that I wanted help; and that my life was in danger, in case I was not favour'd with immediate fuccour; and therefore I bid him order all the fervants to come up well arm'd. Such an order as this, which poflibly might be given with an air of conlusion, could not but alarm the whole fa-My fervants were difmily in an instant. VOL. IV. pers'd

❷

pers'd up and down; and the hurry of getting them together was fo great, that those in the park had notice of it. The ladies heard the danger I was in; and their affection increasing the fear with which they were feiz'd, they imagin'd that I had been affaffinated. Cecilia trembled most for my life; and thereby forgot, that it was of the highest consequence, not to let it be known that she was in my house. She ran, with the women after her, and got to the stair-foot before the servants were come with their weapons. Gelin had, perhaps, mistrusted something, upon seeing me whisper the footman's but hearing a noise, and hearing miss Cecilia call aloud for me, he did not doubt but I intended to seize him. Immediately he was fir'd with rage, when he drew his fword as quick as lightning, and made a thrust at me. However, I had the good fortune to parry it; but as I rose from my chair in order to lay hold of him's he threw me on the touch which stood just by, and run his sword twice thro' my body; fo that I now lay on my back, the blood streaming from my body. The canon, who, perhaps, had endeavour'd to feize upon the affaffin, but mis'd him twice, catch'd hold of his arm just as he was going to make the third thrust. The

for lin

vo.

hav fta doo vio

her car fro faw laid

that fide but she

don as t

tinu tuni had

in a

Ho

of

hat

The

ind

rith

hat

led

hat

let

ife.

nd

nts

id,

ee-

ar-

aH

I

he

his

2

od

m

n's

od o'

k,

he

'd

m

he

he rd sword fell to the ground, and roll'd to some distance from the bed; which Gelin seeing, he did not offer to take it up, but pulling a brace of pistols out of his pocket, he presented them, and endeavour'd to run down stairs.

THE reader may suppose, that all I have just now related was done in an instant. Cecilia was got very near to the door, when Gelin push'd her with so much violence, that he had like to have thrown her down; but recovering herself, she came into my room, the tears gushing from her eyes. Here the first thing she faw, was Gelin's fword all bloody. She hid hold of it, when not doubting, but that the canon who stood by the bed fide, and was affifting me, had contributed to my death, or was killing me; she advanced towards him with the point, in order to run him thro' the body. don't know how he came to be so happy as to escape her, but he turn'd about so luddenly, that at the first push, the sword only run thro' his gown; but she still continued to thrust at him, and he was so for-As I still tunate as to ward them all. had all my fenses about me, I begg'd her in a faint voice to spare him, but this feem'd only to exasperate her the more, However, by good luck for the canon, fome N 2

G

at

W

fo

DI

bo

th

ga

10

lo

Cl

aff

in

ha

as

afl

tra

ma

be

ha

thi

ftr

the

my

WO

as t

giv

110

av

ere

Jome of the servants came to his succour. Dring was at their head, who had seiz'd Gelin, notwithstanding the great resistance he made. That villain, seeing nine or ten men arm'd at the bottom of the stairs, had threaten'd to shoot the first man through the head, who should presume to stop him. But Dring who was a very bold man, made him no manner of answer, but running to him, and presenting a pistol, bid him lay down his; which disconcerted Gelin to such a degree, that he suffer'd himself to be seiz'd. After this he was very easily disarm'd, and four of my servants held him saft.

· DRING was furpriz'd at his coming into the room, to fee miss Cecilia running at Mr. Audiger; and seeing me wounded and stretch'd on the bed, he also imagin'd that the good canon was one of the affaffins; and fo far from endeavouring to affift him, methoughts I could fee by his uncertainty, that he would have been glad to have feen him punish'd by the hands of a woman; and indeed, had he really been guilty, no kind of punishment would have suited better for an ecclesiastic. I thereupon bid them take the fword out of Cecilia's hand, which she deliver'd at once, and coming up to me, gave me the fondest marks of her affliction. My filter,

our.

z'd

nce

the

first ore-

was

an-

is;

de-

'd.

ind

ing

ing

ded

na-

the

ing

by

een

nds

lly

uld

out

at

me

1y

er,

I

fifter, Mrs. Lallin, and my niece came in at the same time, and began to view my wounds. Immediately a surgeon was sent for from St. Cloud, who being come, and probing my wounds, found they were both dangerous, but could not say whether they were mortal. What, however, gave him the best hopes, was, to find me so calm and easy, notwithstanding I had lost so much blood.

THE fending for the furgeon from St. Cloud, prov'd of fatal consequence to the affaffin. I had given orders for his being fecur'd very carefully, intending to have him brought into my room, as foon as my wounds should be dress'd; and to ask him the reasons, why he had perpetrated fo horrid a crime. But the footman who was fent to St. Cloud, not having been order'd to keep the affair a fectet, had told it to every body. Soon after this it got to the ears of the chief magistrate of the place; who immediately fent their officers, and thefe took him from my house, and carried him to prison. My wounds were dreffing at that time; and as the people about us, were not willing to give me the least uneafiness in the condition I was in; they therefore didn't take a word of notice to me about it. However, I did not approve of what they had N. 3 done,

done, when I was told that the wretch had been carried to prison; for besides, that I should have had the generofity to forgive him; I found myself frustrated by this means, of knowing what had prompted him to commit this wicked deed. Mr. Audiger, who was now reconcil'd with miss Cecilia, and of whom I ask'd several particulars with regard to this fad incident; protested to me that he had never feen Gelin before that day; and that he had brought him merely at the request of the chaplain of Chaillot; who had defir'd that favour of him by letter. This recommendation certainly shew'd, that my wife still kept up a correspondence with Gelin; but altho' I cou'd not ascribe her professing, notwithstanding this, to lead a holy life, to any thing but the most detestable hypocrify; I yet cou'd not carry my suspicions fo far, as to think she had any hand in, or the least knowledge of, the barbarous action I have just now related. She, in that case, did I say, cou'd not be a woman, but a detestable monster and fury. I thereupon endeavour'd to banish this thought, as tho it would have been criminal in one to entertain it. It had even made me shudder, in a manner, the first time it occurr'd to my imagination. Nevertheless it wou'd still present itself, tha' I did

t

a

t

r

id

at

1-

y

t-

r.

th

al ci-

er

he

at

a-

pt o'

t-

to

)j-

d

1-

e,

)-

y. is

i-

n

I did my utmost to keep it out. My fister took notice that I was very uneafy at something, which made her ask me what it was? -What construction, says I, can you put, on Gelin's correspondence with the chaplain of Chaillet? Is it possible that my wife cou'd be fo base? I did not dare to go on; but my fifter knew what I hinted at; the threw her eyes on the ground, and did not dare to make a word of answer; upon which I defir'd her to speak herthoughts. This she at last did, but with the utmost reluctance, when she confess'd to me, that Mrs. Lallin, Cecilia, and herfelf, had the same apprehension as I, since they had heard the particulars Mr. Audiger related. This cruel confirmation of a doubt, which I at first look'd upon as a crime, made a mortal impression on my heart. I felt the tears, as tho' they had been of fire, run down my cheeks. Heaven! fays I, thou now compleatest the measure of my woe. Barbarous Fanny! alas! what have I done? All that is wanting to compleat thy pleasure and thy iniquity, is, to stab my heart! Cecilia was present, who, so far from being offended at my complaints, I plainly faw by her eyes, that they affected her prodigiously. Alas! Cecilia, fays I, looking mournfully at her; your kindness only can give me consolation.

tion. I should hate life, which the treacherous Gelin and my more cruel wife, endeavour'd to-deprive me of, had I not the sweet assurance of leading a most delicious

one with you.

HER father, who had got that day nominated for the commissioners to meet. and to take the depositions of the witnesses, arriv'd early in the morning at Charenton; but was very much furprized not to fee my family there, at the hour appointed; and therefore he came to my house at night, when he heard the fatal accidents which had happen'd. In his passion, he resolv'd to have Gelin profecuted with the greatest rigour; and to trace the horrid action he had committed as far as possible, in order to discover all his accomplices. I endeavour'd to fosten his rage, by telling him that I dreaded too much to know, what I defir'd to be for ever ignorant of. Befides, fays I, confider that it affects my honour. Wou'd you advise me to blaze my own shame, and by that means, perhaps, make my infamous wife die by the hands of the common executioner? She does not, indeed deserve a better fate; but then, I ought to facrifice my own referements to her father's memory; to my own honour, and even yours, fince you have confented that I should marry your daughter. I therefore,

therefore, says I, approve so little of your advice, that I, on the contrary, entreat you to employ your credit, and that of your friends, to stop Gelin's profecution, and to fave him, tho' he is fo unworthy to live, 'Twas upon this account I fo earnestly desir'd to speak with you. The dutchess of Orleans is daily expected, only prevail with the judges to delay the profecution'till she is come, and I don't doubt but her highness will indulge me in whatever favour I shall ask. Mr. Rapprov'd of these reasons; and going to St. Cloud, he got the profecution postpon'd 'till the dutchess's return; but cou'd not so easily be admitted to see Gelin in prison. I had desir'd him to request this favour of the judges; and to do all that lay in his power, to make Gelin confess; but he was not permitted to see him. However, I was very well fatisfied with the favour he had obtain'd; and to hear from him that the dutchess would come before 'twas long's being the greatest part of her baggage arriv'd at the palace.

And indeed, she came two days after, with the whole court. This we knew by the ringing of the bells, and other testimonies of publick joy; for this excellent princess was so universally belov'd, that every one was extremely forry, when she

was absent. Pleasures were never tasted but when she was present; but alas! she was to tafte but few more in this world, for her life was now drawing to a period. How frail is human grandeur! In the bloom of youth, but one remove from the throne, in the midft of delights, and a profusion of all things that can make life delicious; she was a few days after this, to fee all these things torn from her; and ferve as an example to those who lay too much firefs on the advantages of high birth. and riches. Her return was not only fatal to herself, for Cecilia was included in the fame fad decree, which fnatch'd her out of the world; and if this illustrious princes. ferv'd as a memente to those who are too fond of the fading glories of this world; Cecilia, was a dreadful one to all fuch as fet too high a value on the lovely gifts of nature, and the charms of beauty. I only, who, for fo many years had been the fport of fortune; after having past thro a feries of calamities, was deftin'd, at a: time when I least expected it, to be happy beyond imagination. But then I was doom'd to a long course of suffering, before I cou'd attain to this felicity; and pursuant to the usual course of my fate, my bliss was to cost me dear, after posfeffing it but a few moments.

The End of the fourth Volume.

